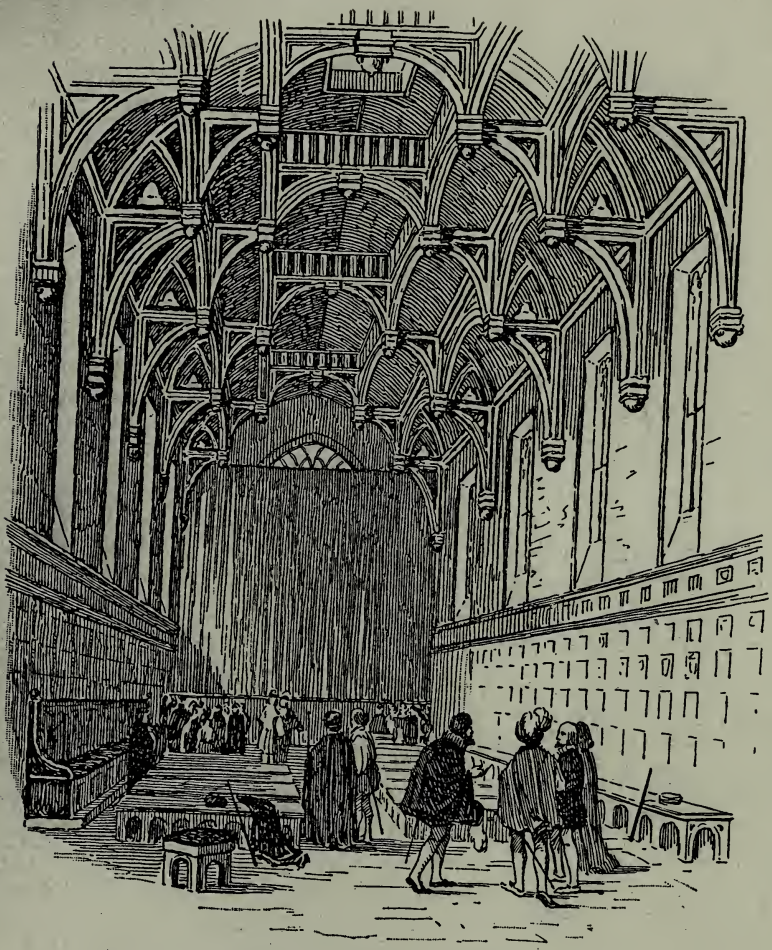
HAROLD B. LEE LIBRARY
BRIGHAM YOUNG UNIVERSITY
PROVO, UTAH



MIDDLE TEMPLE HALL

SHAKESPEARE'S

822.338
P644
v.6

COMEDY OF

TWELFTH NIGHT

OR

WHAT YOU WILL

EDITED, WITH NOTES

BY

WILLIAM J. ROLFE, LITT. D.
FORMERLY HEAD MASTER OF THE HIGH SCHOOL
CAMBRIDGE, MASS.

ILLUSTRATED

NEW YORK ·:· CINCINNATI ·:· CHICAGO
AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

Copyright, 1904, by
WILLIAM J. ROLFE.

TWELFTH NIGHT.
W. P. I

THE LIBRARY
BRIGHAM YOUNG UNIVERSITY
PROVO, UTAH

PREFACE

My former edition of *Twelfth Night*, first published in 1879, is now substantially remade on the same general plan as the revised *Merchant of Venice* and other plays that have preceded it.

The notes on *textual variations* have been either omitted or abridged, as this play, like most of the others read in schools and colleges, is now among the twelve plays that Dr. Furness has edited. No teacher can afford to do without his encyclopedic volumes, which furnish not only a complete *variorum* of the textual readings, but a condensed library of the English and foreign literature relating to each play.

For most of the "Critical Comments" in the former edition I have substituted matter of my own, much of which is drawn from familiar lectures prepared for audiences of teachers and students.

Minor changes have been made throughout the Notes, and many new ones have been added, including a considerable number in place of those referring to my former editions of other plays. The book is now absolutely complete in itself.

I believe that teachers will prefer the new edition to the old one; but both can be used, without serious inconvenience, in the same class or club.

CONTENTS

PAGE

INTRODUCTION TO TWELFTH NIGHT 9

The History of the Play 9

The Sources of the Plot 11

General Comments on the Play 12

TWELFTH NIGHT 21

Act I 23

Act II 47

Act III 72

Act IV 101

Act V 111

NOTES 131

APPENDIX

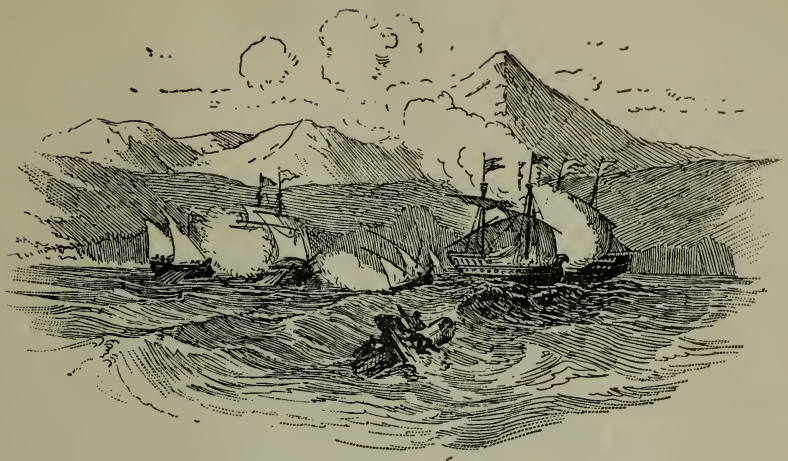
Comments on Some of the Characters 225

The Time-Analysis of the Play 238

List of Characters in the Play 239

INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES EXPLAINED . . . 241

"Into the Chantry"



SEA-FIGHT (iii. 3. 26)

INTRODUCTION TO TWELFTH NIGHT

THE HISTORY OF THE PLAY

THIS play was first printed, so far as we know, in the folio of 1623, where it appears under the title of "Twelfe Night, Or what you will," and occupies pages 255–275 in the division of "Comedies."

The earliest reference to the play that has been found is in a MS. diary of John Manningham, a member of the Middle Temple, which is preserved in the British Museum (MSS. Harl. 5353). The passage reads thus :[1]

[1] I give it as printed by Furness, who takes it from the *Camden Society Reprints*. No two editors print it in precisely the same form. Collier, Knight, and Staunton have "inscribing" instead of "in smiling," and Hudson omits the words.

It will be seen that Manningham refers to Olivia as a "widdowe."

"FEBR. 1601.

"Feb. 2. At our feast, wee had a play called Twelue Night, or What you Will, much like the Commedy of Errores, or Menechmi in Plautus, but most like and neere to that in Italian called *Inganni*. A good practise in it to make the Steward beleeue his Lady widdowe was in loue with him, by counterfeyting a letter as from his Lady in generall termes, telling him what shee liked best in him, and prescribing his gesture in smiling, his apparaile, etc., and then when he came to practise making him beleeue they tooke him to be mad."

As *Twelfth Night* is not included in Meres's list of Shakespeare's plays in his *Palladis Tamia*, we may infer that it was written between the publication of that book, in September, 1598, and February, 1601[2]. It seems probable from Manningham's detailed description that it was comparatively a new play when he saw it. It is assigned by the majority of critics to 1600 or 1601.

The play is, on the whole, well printed in the folio, and the difficulties in the text are comparatively few. It is divided into acts and scenes, but has no list of *dramatis personæ*.

The name *Twelfth Night* was probably suggested by

It is possible, as Collier suggests, that she was so represented in the comedy as first performed, or the writer may have been misled by the fact that she was in mourning for her brother. See also on iii. 4. 57 below.

the time of its first production, or by "its embodiment of the spirit of the Twelfth Night (twelfth after Christmas) sports and revels — a time devoted to festivity and merriment" (White). The second title, *Or What You Will*, seems to imply that the first has no special meaning, though Ulrici sees a subtle significance in it.[1]

The Sources of the Plot

There are two Italian plays entitled *Gl' Inganni* (The Deceits), published in the latter part of the sixteenth century, and containing incidents somewhat resembling those of *Twelfth Night*. In one of them the sister who assumes male apparel bears the name Cesare, which may have suggested Shakespeare's *Cesario*. A third Italian play, *Gl' Ingannati*, has even a closer likeness to *Twelfth Night*, and in its Induction we find the name Malevolti, of which *Malvolio* may be a variation. It has been recently discovered (see the preface to Furness's "New Variorum" edition of the play) that a Latin translation of this Italian drama, under the title of *Lælia* (the name of the heroine), was performed at Queen's College, Cambridge, in 1590, and again in 1598. Shakespeare's "small Latin" was large enough for the reading of this play, and he may have been indebted to it rather than to any other source that has been suggested. It has been generally assumed that he

[1] See half a page on the subject in his *Shakspeare's Dramatic Art* (Schmitz's trans. of 3d ed. vol. ii. p. 5).

must have read and used the version of the story by Barnaby Riche, in his *History of Apolonius and Silla*, included in *Riche His Farewell to Militarie Profession;* but Furness doubts that Shakespeare ever read the "coarse repulsive novel." The resemblances between the story and the play are few and slight. "Let nothing induce us to contaminate the spotless Viola and the haughty Olivia by the remotest hint of a kinship with the weak Silla and the brazen Julina."

From whichever source the dramatist derived the hint of his plot, he owed to it only a few incidents and the mere skeleton of some of the characters. Malvolio, Sir Toby, Sir Andrew, Fabian, the Clown, and Maria are entirely his own creation; as indeed all the other actors in the drama are in all that gives them life and individuality.

General Comments on the Play

Twelfth Night is the brightest and sunniest of the three plays of Shakespeare's "golden prime of comedy." *As You Like It* and *Much Ado* both have a larger admixture of the serious and sentimental, but that element in *Twelfth Night* is of the most delicate and ethereal character. The play was meant, as the title indicates, for the climax of the holiday season, when the sport and revelry are at their height, and sober occupations and serious interests are laid aside and forgotten. Only enough of the shadow of the workaday world is left to form a background to the lively picture, and to remind

us that life is not all pleasure and pastime, but that after the Twelfth Night revels are over, the morning brings back its duties and responsibilities and "man goeth forth unto his labour until the evening."

The Hall of the Middle Temple, where John Manningham saw the play, is one of the only two buildings remaining in London where we know that any of Shakespeare's dramas were performed in his lifetime; the other being the Hall of Gray's Inn, where, according to the *Gesta Grayorum*, the *Comedy of Errors* was "played by the players" in December, 1594.

The Temple Hall was built in 1572. It is one hundred feet long, forty-two feet wide, and forty-seven feet high; and the roof is the best specimen of Elizabethan architecture in London. The exterior has been modified considerably in more recent times, but the interior has suffered slight change since Shakespeare's day.

Hawthorne, in his *English Note-Books*, gives the following description of the hall: "Truly it is a most magnificent apartment; very lofty, so lofty, indeed, that the antique roof is quite hidden, as regards all its details, in the sombre gloom that broods under its rafters. The hall is lighted by four great windows on each of the two sides, descending halfway from the ceiling to the floor, leaving all beneath enclosed by oaken panelling, which on three sides is carved with escutcheons of such members of the society as have held the office of reader. There is likewise in a large recess or transept a great window occupying the full height of the hall and

splendidly emblazoned with the arms of the Templars who have attained to the dignity of Chief-justices. The other windows are pictured, in like manner, with coats of arms of local dignities connected with the Temple; and besides all these there are arched lights, high towards the roof, at either end, full of richly and chastely coloured glass; and all the illumination that the great hall had came through these glorious panes, and they seemed the richer for the sombreness in which we stood. I cannot describe, or even intimate, the effect of this transparent glory, glowing down upon us in the gloomy depth of the hall. The screen at the lower end is of carved oak very dark and highly polished, and as old as Queen Elizabeth's time. . . . I am reluctant to leave this hall without expressing how grave, how grand, how sombre, and how magnificent I felt it to be. As regards historical associations, it was a favourite dancing-hall of Queen Elizabeth, and Sir Christopher Hatton danced himself into her good graces there."

The feasts of Christmas, Halloween, Candlemas, and Ascension were formerly celebrated here with great magnificence. A Master of the Revels was chosen, and the Lord Chancellor, Judges, and Benchers opened the sports by dancing thrice around the sea-coal fire:—

"Full oft within the spacious walls,
When he had fifty winters o'er him,
My grave Lord Keeper led the brawls;
The Seal and Maces danced before him."

This judicial foolery was satirized by Buckingham in *The Rehearsal*, by Prior in his *Alma*, and by Donne in his *Satires;* and Pope has his fling at it in the *Dunciad:*—

"The judge to dance, his brother serjeant calls."

It was in this hall at dinner-time that Mr. Richard Martin, the Bencher to whom Ben Jonson dedicated his *Poetaster*, was thrashed by Sir John Davies, who for this display of unruly temper was expelled from the society.

Shakespeare alludes to the hall in 1 *Henry IV.* iii. 3. 223, where the Prince says to Falstaff, "Meet me to-morrow in the Temple Hall at two o'clock in the afternoon;" and again in 1 *Henry VI.* ii. 4. 3, where the scene is laid in the Temple Gardens, and Suffolk says to Plantagenet:—

"Within the Temple Hall we were too loud;
The garden here is more convenient."

We see at a glance that the plot of *Twelfth Night* combines certain features of *The Two Gentlemen of Verona* and *The Comedy of Errors*. As in the former play, the heroine, in a foreign land and in masculine disguise, becomes the servant of the man she loves, who at the time is in love with another woman, but is not loved in return and eventually reciprocates the affection of the maiden page; and, as in *The Comedy of Errors*, there is amusing confusion on account of the

resemblance of twins to each other. In the passion of Olivia for the disguised girl we have the counterpart of the episode of Phebe and Rosalind in *As You Like It;* and in both cases the lady gets a husband in place of the one who can "marry no woman." In *All's Well* Helena pursues Bertram, but does not woo another in his name, though she gets him in the end. The romantic passion of the Duke for Olivia reminds us of the similar unrequited fancy of Romeo for Rosaline; both of the "first loves" being forgotten as soon as the destined mate appears.

Certain minor "parallelisms" are pointed out by Furnivall: "*The Merchant of Venice* gives us another Antonio willing to give his life for his friend Bassanio, just as here in *Twelfth Night* Antonio faces danger, nay, death, a pirate's due, for his love to his friend Sebastian. And to the same *Merchant* we surely go for recollections of the opening scene here, —

> 'That strain again! it had a dying fall;
> O, it came o'er my ear like the sweet sound
> That breathes upon a bank of violets,
> Stealing and giving odour,' —

and for a parallel to the Duke's love of music through the play. *Henry IV.* gives us in Falstaff and his followers the company whence Sir Toby Belch and Sir Andrew Aguecheek come, as the Second Part of that play gives us Falstaff playing on Justice Shallow as Sir Toby in *Twelfth Night* plays on Sir Andrew. Is not

also Slender's echoing of Shallow in *Merry Wives* something like Sir Andrew echoing all Sir Toby's sayings here, and fancying himself a man for it? It is to the *Sonnets* that we turn for a parallel to Viola's pleading with Olivia to marry the Duke, and not forbear to leave a copy of her beauty to the world, and to the *Sonnets* to his mistress for Shakspere's love of music; while to match Viola's entire devotion even to death to the Duke's most unjust will we must look forward, even past the *Sonnets*, to the true and loving Imogen's willingness to die in obedience to her deceived and headstrong husband's iniquitous sentence of death on her (*Cymb.* iii. 4. 65–79)."

I cannot better close these preliminary comments than with a portion of Verplanck's introduction to the play: [1] —

"We may safely fix the date of this comedy about the year 1600 or 1601, and class it among the later productions of that period of Shakespeare's life when his mind most habitually revelled in humorous delineation, while his luxuriant fancy, turning aside from the sterner

[1] *The Illustrated Shakespeare*, edited by G. C. Verplanck (New York, 1847), vol. ii, page 6 of *Twelfth Night*. I am the more inclined to quote from this edition because it has now been out of print for fifty years, having been entirely destroyed (together with nearly all the stereotype plates) in the fire at the Harper establishment in 1853. It was the first critical and thoroughly annotated edition of Shakespeare published in this country, and is still one of the best of its class, American or English. Copies of it are rare in the public libraries, and are seldom offered for sale.

and painful passions, sheds its gayest tints over innumerable forms of grace and beauty. He seems, by his title of the *Twelfth Night*, to apprise his audience of the general character of this agreeable and varied comedy — a notice intelligible enough at that time, and still not without its significance in a great part of Europe, though quite otherwise among our un-holiday-keeping people on this side of the Atlantic. Twelfth Night was, in the olden times, the season of universal festivity — of masques, pageants, feasts, and traditionary sports. This comedy then would not disappoint public expectation, when it was found to contain a delightful combination of the delicate fancy and romantic sentiment of the poetic masque, with a crowd of revelling, laughing, or laugh-creating personages, whose truth all would recognize, and whose spirit and fun no gravity could resist. He gave to these the revelling spirit, and the exaggeration of character necessary for the broadest comic effect, but still kept them from becoming mere buffoon masquers by a truth of portraiture which shows them all to be drawn from real life. Malvolio — the matchless Malvolio — was not only new in his day to comic delineation of any sort, but I believe has never since had his fellow or his copy in any succeeding play, poem, essay, or novel. The gravity, the acquirement, the real talent, and accomplishment of the man, all made ludicrous, fantastical, and absurd by his intense vanity, is as true a conception as it is original and droll, and its truth may still be

frequently attested by actual comparison with real Malvolios, to be found everywhere, from humble domestic life up to the high places of learning, of the State, and even of the Church. Sir Toby certainly comes out of the same associations where the poet saw Falstaff hold his revels. He is not Sir John, nor a fainter sketch of him, yet with an odd sort of family likeness to him. Dryden and other dramatists have felicitated themselves upon success in grouping together their comic underplots with their more heroic personages. But here all, grave and gay, the lovers, the laughers, and the laughed-at, are made to harmonize in one scene and one common purpose. I cannot help adding — though perhaps it may be a capricious over-refinement — that to my mind this comedy resembles *Macbeth*, in one of the marked characteristics of that great drama; appearing, like it, to have been struck out at a heat, as if the whole plot, its characters and dialogue, had presented themselves at once, in one harmonious group, before the 'mind's eye' of the poet, previous to his actually commencing the formal business of writing, and bearing no indication either of an original groundwork of incident, afterwards enriched by the additions of a fuller mind, or of thoughts, situations, and characters accidentally suggested, or growing unexpectedly out of the story as the author proceeded."

TWELFTH NIGHT;

OR,

WHAT YOU WILL

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

ORSINO, Duke of Illyria.
SEBASTIAN, brother to Viola.
ANTONIO, a sea captain, friend to Sebastian.
A Sea Captain, friend to Viola.
VALENTINE, CURIO, } gentlemen attending on the Duke.
SIR TOBY BELCH, uncle to Olivia.
SIR ANDREW AGUECHEEK.
MALVOLIO, steward to Olivia.
FABIAN, FESTE, a Clown, } servants to Olivia.
OLIVIA.
VIOLA.
MARIA, Olivia's woman.

Lords, Priests, Sailors, Officers, Musicians, and other Attendants.

SCENE: *A city in Illyria, and the sea-coast near it.*

SPALATRO

ACT I

SCENE I. *The Duke's Palace*

Enter DUKE, CURIO, *and other* Lords; Musicians *attending*

Duke. If music be the food of love, play on;
Give me excess of it, that, surfeiting,
The appetite may sicken and so die.
That strain again! it had a dying fall;
O, it came o'er my ear like the sweet sound
That breathes upon a bank of violets,
Stealing and giving odour! Enough; no more!
'T is not so sweet now as it was before. —
O spirit of love, how quick and fresh art thou,
That, notwithstanding thy capacity
Receiveth as the sea, nought enters there,
Of what validity and pitch soe'er,

But falls into abatement and low price,
Even in a minute! So full of shapes is fancy
That it alone is high fantastical.

Curio. Will you go hunt, my lord?

Duke. What, Curio?

Curio. The hart.

Duke. Why, so I do, the noblest that I have.
O, when mine eyes did see Olivia first,
Methought she purg'd the air of pestilence!
That instant was I turn'd into a hart;
And my desires, like fell and cruel hounds,
E'er since pursue me. —

Enter VALENTINE

How now! what news from her?

Valentine. So please my lord, I might not be admitted,
But from her handmaid do return this answer:
The element itself, till seven years' heat,
Shall not behold her face at ample view,
But, like a cloistress, she will veiled walk
And water once a day her chamber round
With eye-offending brine; all this to season
A brother's dead love, which she would keep fresh
And lasting in her sad remembrance.

Duke. O, she that hath a heart of that fine frame
To pay this debt of love but to a brother,
How will she love when the rich golden shaft
Hath kill'd the flock of all affections else
That live in her; when liver, brain, and heart,

These sovereign thrones, are all supplied and fill'd —
Her sweet perfection — with one self king!
Away before me to sweet beds of flowers!
Love-thoughts lie rich when canopied with bowers.

[*Exeunt.*

Scene II. *The Sea-coast*

Enter Viola, *a* Captain, *and* Sailors

Viola. What country, friends, is this?

Captain. This is Illyria, lady.

Viola. And what should I do in Illyria?
My brother he is in Elysium.
Perchance he is not drown'd; what think you, sailors?

Captain. It is perchance that you yourself were sav'd.

Viola. O my poor brother! and so perchance may he be.

Captain. True, madam; and, to comfort you with chance,
Assure yourself, after our ship did split,
When you and those poor number sav'd with you
Hung on our driving boat, I saw your brother,
Most provident in peril, bind himself,
Courage and hope both teaching him the practice,
To a strong mast that liv'd upon the sea,
Where, like Arion on the dolphin's back,
I saw him hold acquaintance with the waves
So long as I could see.

Viola. For saying so there 's gold.
Mine own escape unfoldeth to my hope,

Whereto thy speech serves for authority,
The like of him. Know'st thou this country?

Captain. Ay, madam, well; for I was bred and born
Not three hours' travel from this very place.

Viola. Who governs here?

Captain. A noble duke, in nature as in name.

Viola. What is his name?

Captain. Orsino.

Viola. Orsino! I have heard my father name him;
He was a bachelor then.

Captain. And so is now, or was so very late;
For but a month ago I went from hence,
And then 't was fresh in murmur — as, you know,
What great ones do the less will prattle of —
That he did seek the love of fair Olivia.

Viola. What 's she?

Captain. A virtuous maid, the daughter of a count
That died some twelvemonth since, then leaving her
In the protection of his son, her brother,
Who shortly also died; for whose dear love,
They say, she hath abjur'd the company
And sight of men.

Viola. O that I serv'd that lady,
And might not be deliver'd to the world,
Till I had made mine own occasion mellow,
What my estate is!

Captain. That were hard to compass,
Because she will admit no kind of suit.
No, not the duke's.

Viola. There is a fair behaviour in thee, captain;
And though that nature with a beauteous wall
Doth oft close in pollution, yet of thee
I will believe thou hast a mind that suits
With this thy fair and outward character.
I prithee, — and I 'll pay thee bounteously, —
Conceal me what I am, and be my aid
For such disguise as haply shall become
The form of my intent. I 'll serve this duke;
Thou shalt present me as an eunuch to him.
It may be worth thy pains; for I can sing
And speak to him in many sorts of music
That will allow me very worth his service.
What else may hap to time I will commit;
Only shape thou thy silence to my wit.

Captain. Be you his eunuch, and your mute I 'll be;
When my tongue blabs, then let mine eyes not see.

Viola. I thank thee; lead me on. [*Exeunt.*

Scene III. *Olivia's House*

Enter Sir Toby Belch *and* Maria

Sir Toby. What a plague means my niece, to take the death of her brother thus? I am sure care 's an enemy to life.

Maria. By my troth, Sir Toby, you must come in earlier o' nights; your cousin, my lady, takes great exceptions to your ill hours.

Sir Toby. Why, let her except before excepted.

Maria. Ay, but you must confine yourself within the modest limits of order.

Sir Toby. Confine! I 'll confine myself no finer than I am. These clothes are good enough to drink in, and so be these boots too; an they be not, let them hang themselves in their own straps.

Maria. That quaffing and drinking will undo you; I heard my lady talk of it yesterday, and of a foolish knight that you brought in one night here to be her wooer.

Sir Toby. Who, Sir Andrew Aguecheek?

Maria. Ay, he.

Sir Toby. He 's as tall a man as any 's in Illyria.

Maria. What 's that to the purpose?

Sir Toby. Why, he has three thousand ducats a year.

Maria. Ay, but he 'll have but a year in all these ducats; he 's a very fool and a prodigal.

Sir Toby. Fie, that you 'll say so! he plays o' the viol-de-gamboys, and speaks three or four languages word for word without book, and hath all the good gifts of nature.

Maria. He hath indeed, all most natural; for besides that he 's a fool, he 's a great quarreller, and but that he hath the gift of a coward to allay the gust he hath in quarrelling, 't is thought among the prudent he would quickly have the gift of a grave.

Sir Toby. By this hand, they are scoundrels and substractors that say so of him. Who are they?

Maria. They that add, moreover, he 's drunk nightly in your company.

Sir Toby. With drinking healths to my niece; I 'll drink to her as long as there is a passage in my throat and drink in Illyria. He 's a coward and a coystril that will not drink to my niece till his brains turn o' the toe like a parish-top. What, wench! — Castiliano vulgo! for here comes Sir Andrew Agueface.

Enter Sir Andrew Aguecheek

Sir Andrew. Sir Toby Belch! how now, Sir Toby Belch!

Sir Toby. Sweet Sir Andrew!

Sir Andrew. Bless you, fair shrew!

Maria. And you too, sir.

Sir Toby. Accost, Sir Andrew, accost.

Sir Andrew. What 's that?

Sir Toby. My niece's chambermaid.

Sir Andrew. Good Mistress Accost, I desire better acquaintance.

Maria. My name is Mary, sir.

Sir Andrew. Good Mistress Mary Accost, —

Sir Toby. You mistake, knight; accost is front her, board her, woo her, assail her.

Sir Andrew. By my troth, I would not undertake her in this company. Is that the meaning of accost?

Maria. Fare you well, gentlemen.

Sir Toby. An thou let part so, Sir Andrew, would thou mightst never draw sword again!

Sir Andrew. An you part so, mistress, I would I might never draw sword again! Fair lady, do you think you have fools in hand?

Maria. Sir, I have not you by the hand.

Sir Andrew. Marry, but you shall have; and here 's my hand.

Maria. Now, sir, thought is free; I pray you, bring your hand to the buttery-bar and let it drink.

Sir Andrew. Wherefore, sweet-heart? what's your metaphor?

Maria. It 's dry, sir.

Sir Andrew. Why, I think so; I am not such an ass but I can keep my hand dry. But what 's your jest?

Maria. A dry jest, sir.

Sir Andrew. Are you full of them?

Maria. Ay, sir, I have them at my fingers' ends; marry, now I let go your hand, I am barren. [*Exit.*

Sir Toby. O knight, thou lackest a cup of canary! when did I see thee so put down?

Sir Andrew. Never in your life, I think; unless you see canary put me down. Methinks sometimes I have no more wit than a Christian or an ordinary man has; but I am a great eater of beef, and I believe that does harm to my wit.

Sir Toby. No question.

Sir Andrew. An I thought that, I'd forswear it. I 'll ride home to-morrow, Sir Toby.

Sir Toby. Pourquoi, my dear knight?

Sir Andrew. What is pourquoi? do or not do? I would I had bestowed that time in the tongues that I have in fencing, dancing, and bear-baiting! O, had I but followed the arts!

Sir Toby. Then hadst thou had an excellent head of hair.

Sir Andrew. Why, would that have mended my hair?

Sir Toby. Past question; for thou seest it will not curl by nature.

Sir Andrew. But it becomes me well enough, does 't not?

Sir Toby. Excellent; it hangs like flax on a distaff, and I hope to see a housewife take thee and spin it off.

Sir Andrew. Faith, I 'll home to-morrow, Sir Toby. Your niece will not be seen, or if she be, it 's four to one she 'll none of me; the count himself here hard by wooes her.

Sir Toby. She 'll none o' the count. She 'll not match above her degree, neither in estate, years, nor wit; I have heard her swear 't. Tut, there 's life in 't, man.

Sir Andrew. I 'll stay a month longer. I am a fellow o' the strangest mind i' the world; I delight in masques and revels sometimes altogether.

Sir Toby. Art thou good at these kickshawses, knight?

Sir Andrew. As any man in Illyria, whatsoever

he be, under the degree of my betters; and yet I will not compare with an old man.

Sir Toby. What is thy excellence in a galliard, knight?

Sir Andrew. Faith, I can cut a caper.

Sir Toby. And I can cut the mutton to 't.

Sir Andrew. And I think I have the back-trick simply as strong as any man in Illyria.

Sir Toby. Wherefore are these things hid? wherefore have these gifts a curtain before 'em? are they like to take dust, like Mistress Mall's picture? why dost thou not go to church in a galliard and come home in a coranto? My very walk should be a jig. What dost thou mean? Is it a world to hide virtues in? I did think, by the excellent constitution of thy leg, it was formed under the star of a galliard.

Sir Andrew. Ay, 't is strong, and it does indifferent well in a flame-coloured stock. Shall we set about some revels?

Sir Toby. What shall we do else? were we not born under Taurus?

Sir Andrew. Taurus! That 's sides and heart.

Sir Toby. No, sir; it is legs and thighs. Let me see thee caper. Ha! higher! ha, ha! excellent!

[*Exeunt.*

Scene IV. *The Duke's Palace*

Enter Valentine *and* Viola *in man's attire*

Valentine. If the duke continue these favours towards you, Cesario, you are like to be much

advanced; he hath known you but three days, and already you are no stranger.

Viola. You either fear his humour or my negligence, that you call in question the continuance of his love. Is he inconstant, sir, in his favours?

Valentine. No, believe me.

Viola. I thank you. Here comes the count.

Enter DUKE, CURIO, *and* Attendants

Duke. Who saw Cesario, ho?

Viola. On your attendance, my lord; here.

Duke. Stand you awhile aloof. — Cesario,
Thou know'st no less but all; I have unclasp'd
To thee the book even of my secret soul.
Therefore, good youth, address thy gait unto her;
Be not denied access, stand at her doors,
And tell them, there thy fixed foot shall grow
Till thou have audience.

Viola. Sure, my noble lord,
If she be so abandon'd to her sorrow
As it is spoke, she never will admit me.

Duke. Be clamorous and leap all civil bounds
Rather than make unprofited return.

Viola. Say I do speak with her, my lord, what then?

Duke. O, then unfold the passion of my love,
Surprise her with discourse of my dear faith.
It shall become thee well to act my woes;
She will attend it better in thy youth
Than in a nuncio of more grave aspect.

Viola. I think not so, my lord.

Duke. Dear lad, believe it,
For they shall yet belie thy happy years
That say thou art a man. Diana's lip
Is not more smooth and rubious; thy small pipe
Is as the maiden's organ, shrill and sound,
And all is semblative a woman's part.
I know thy constellation is right apt
For this affair. — Some four or five attend him;
All, if you will, for I myself am best
When least in company. — Prosper well in this,
And thou shalt live as freely as thy lord,
To call his fortunes thine.

Viola. I 'll do my best
To woo your lady. — [*Aside*] Yet, a barful strife!
Whoe'er I woo, myself would be his wife. [*Exeunt.*

Scene V. *Olivia's House*

Enter Maria *and* Clown

Maria. Nay, either tell me where thou hast been, or I will not open my lips so wide as a bristle may enter in way of thy excuse. My lady will hang thee for thy absence.

Clown. Let her hang me; he that is well hanged in this world needs to fear no colours.

Maria. Make that good.

Clown. He shall see none to fear.

Maria. A good lenten answer. I can tell thee where that saying was born, of 'I fear no colours.'

Clown. Where, good Mistress Mary?

Maria. In the wars; and that may you be bold to say in your foolery.

Clown. Well, God give them wisdom that have it; and those that are fools, let them use their talents.

Maria. Yet you will be hanged for being so long absent; or, to be turned away, is not that as good as a hanging to you?

Clown. Many a good hanging prevents a bad marriage; and, for turning away, let summer bear it out.

Maria. You are resolute, then?

Clown. Not so, neither; but I am resolved on two points.

Maria. That if one break, the other will hold; or, if both break, your gaskins fall.

Clown. Apt, in good faith; very apt. Well, go thy way; if Sir Toby would leave drinking, thou wert as witty a piece of Eve's flesh as any in Illyria.

Maria. Peace, you rogue, no more o' that. Here comes my lady; make your excuse wisely, you were best. [*Exit.*

Clown. Wit, an 't be thy will, put me into good fooling! Those wits that think they have thee do very oft prove fools, and I, that am sure I lack thee, may pass for a wise man; for what says Quinapalus? 'Better a witty fool than a foolish wit.'—

Enter Lady Olivia *with* Malvolio

God bless thee, lady!

Olivia. Take the fool away.

Clown. Do you not hear, fellows? Take away the lady.

Olivia. Go to, you 're a dry fool; I 'll no more of you. Besides, you grow dishonest.

Clown. Two faults, madonna, that drink and good counsel will amend; for give the dry fool drink, then is the fool not dry. Bid the dishonest man mend himself, if he mend he is no longer dishonest; if he cannot, let the botcher mend him. Any thing that 's mended is but patched; virtue that transgresses is but patched with sin, and sin that amends is but patched with virtue. If that this simple syllogism will serve, so; if it will not, what remedy? As there is no true cuckold but calamity, so beauty 's a flower. The lady bade take away the fool; therefore, I say again, take her away.

Olivia. Sir, I bade them take away you.

Clown. Misprision in the highest degree! Lady, cucullus non facit monachum; that 's as much to say as I wear not motley in my brain. Good madonna, give me leave to prove you a fool.

Olivia. Can you do it?

Clown. Dexteriously, good madonna.

Olivia. Make your proof.

Clown. I must catechise you for it, madonna; good my mouse of virtue, answer me.

Olivia. Well, sir, for want of other idleness, I 'll bide your proof.

Clown. Good madonna, why mournest thou?

Olivia. Good fool, for my brother's death.

Clown. I think his soul is in hell, madonna.

Olivia. I know his soul is in heaven, fool.

Clown. The more fool, madonna, to mourn for your brother's soul being in heaven. — Take away the fool, gentlemen.

Olivia. What think you of this fool, Malvolio? doth he not mend?

Malvolio. Yes, and shall do till the pangs of death shake him; infirmity, that decays the wise, doth ever make the better fool.

Clown. God send you, sir, a speedy infirmity, for the better increasing your folly! Sir Toby will be sworn that I am no fox; but he will not pass his word for twopence that you are no fool.

Olivia. How say you to that, Malvolio?

Malvolio. I marvel your ladyship takes delight in such a barren rascal; I saw him put down the other day with an ordinary fool that has no more brain than a stone. Look you now, he 's out of his guard already; unless you laugh and minister occasion to him, he is gagged. I protest, I take these wise men that crow so at these set kind of fools no better than the fools' zanies.

Olivia. O, you are sick of self-love, Malvolio, and taste with a distempered appetite. To be generous,

guiltless, and of free disposition, is to take those things for bird-bolts that you deem cannon-bullets. There is no slander in an allowed fool, though he do nothing but rail; nor no railing in a known discreet man, though he do nothing but reprove.

Clown. Now Mercury endue thee with leasing, for thou speakest well of fools!

Re-enter MARIA

Maria. Madam, there is at the gate a young gentleman much desires to speak with you.

Olivia. From the Count Orsino, is it?

Maria. I know not, madam; 't is a fair young man, and well attended.

Olivia. Who of my people hold him in delay?

Maria. Sir Toby, madam, your kinsman.

Olivia. Fetch him off, I pray you, he speaks nothing but madman; fie on him! — [*Exit Maria.*] Go you, Malvolio. If it be a suit from the count, I am sick, or not at home; what you will, to dismiss it. — [*Exit Malvolio.*] Now you see, sir, how your fooling grows old, and people dislike it.

Clown. Thou hast spoke for us, madonna, as if thy eldest son should be a fool; whose skull Jove cram with brains! for — here he comes — one of thy kin has a most weak pia mater.

Enter SIR TOBY

Olivia. By mine honour, half drunk. — What is he at the gate, cousin?

Sir Toby. A gentleman.

Olivia. A gentleman! what gentleman?

Sir Toby. 'T is a gentleman here — a plague o' these pickle-herring! — How now, sot!

Clown. Good Sir Toby!

Olivia. Cousin, cousin, how have you come so early by this lethargy?

Sir Toby. Lechery! I defy lechery. There 's one at the gate.

Olivia. Ay, marry, what is he?

Sir Toby. Let him be the devil, an he will, I care not; give me faith, say I. Well, it 's all one. [*Exit.*

Olivia. What 's a drunken man like, fool?

Clown. Like a drowned man, a fool, and a madman: one draught above heat makes him a fool; the second mads him; and a third drowns him.

Olivia. Go thou and seek the crowner, and let him sit o' my coz, for he 's in the third degree of drink, he 's drowned; go, look after him.

Clown. He is but mad yet, madonna; and the fool shall look to the madman. [*Exit.*

Re-enter MALVOLIO

Malvolio. Madam, yond young fellow swears he will speak with you. I told him you were sick; he takes on him to understand so much, and therefore comes to speak with you. I told him you were asleep; he seems to have a foreknowledge of that too, and therefore comes to speak with you. What

is to be said to him, lady? he 's fortified against any denial.

Olivia. Tell him he shall not speak with me.

Malvolio. He has been told so; and he says, he 'll stand at your door like a sheriff's post, and be the supporter to a bench, but he 'll speak with you.

Olivia. What kind o' man is he?

Malvolio. Why, of mankind.

Olivia. What manner of man?

Malvolio. Of very ill manner; he 'll speak with you, will you or no.

Olivia. Of what personage and years is he?

Malvolio. Not yet old enough for a man, nor young enough for a boy, as a squash is before 't is a peascod, or a codling when 't is almost an apple; 't is with him in standing water, between boy and man. He is very well-favoured and he speaks very shrewishly; one would think his mother's milk were scarce out of him.

Olivia. Let him approach; call in my gentlewoman.

Malvolio. Gentlewoman, my lady calls. [*Exit.*

Re-enter MARIA

Olivia. Give me my veil; come, throw it o'er my face. We 'll once more hear Orsino's embassy.

Enter VIOLA, *and* Attendants

Viola. The honourable lady of the house, which is she?

Olivia. Speak to me; I shall answer for her. Your will?

Viola. Most radiant, exquisite, and unmatchable beauty,—I pray you, tell me if this be the lady of the house, for I never saw her; I would be loath to cast away my speech, for besides that it is excellently well penned, I have taken great pains to con it. Good beauties, let me sustain no scorn; I am very comptible, even to the least sinister usage.

Olivia. Whence came you, sir?

Viola. I can say little more than I have studied, and that question 's out of my part. Good gentle one, give me modest assurance if you be the lady of the house, that I may proceed in my speech.

Olivia. Are you a comedian?

Viola. No, my profound heart; and yet, by the very fangs of malice I swear, I am not that I play. Are you the lady of the house?

Olivia. If I do not usurp myself, I am.

Viola. Most certain, if you are she, you do usurp yourself; for what is yours to bestow is not yours to reserve. But this is from my commission; I will on with my speech in your praise, and then show you the heart of my message.

Olivia. Come to what is important in 't; I forgive you the praise.

Viola. Alas, I took great pains to study it, and 't is poetical.

Olivia. It is the more like to be feigned; I pray

you, keep it in. I heard you were saucy at my gates, and allowed your approach rather to wonder at you than to hear you. If you be not mad, be gone; if you have reason, be brief; 't is not that time of moon with me to make one in so skipping a dialogue.

Maria. Will you hoist sail, sir? here lies your way.

Viola. No, good swabber; I am to hull here a little longer. — Some mollification for your giant, sweet lady. Tell me your mind; I am a messenger.

Olivia. Sure, you have some hideous matter to deliver, when the courtesy of it is so fearful. Speak your office.

Viola. It alone concerns your ear. I bring no overture of war, no taxation of homage: I hold the olive in my hand; my words are as full of peace as matter.

Olivia. Yet you began rudely. What are you? what would you?

Viola. The rudeness that hath appeared in me have I learned from my entertainment. What I am, and what I would, are as secret as maidenhead: to your ears, divinity; to any other's, profanation.

Olivia. Give us the place alone; we will hear this divinity. — [*Exeunt Maria and Attendants.*] Now, sir, what is your text?

Viola. Most sweet lady, —

Olivia. A comfortable doctrine, and much may be said of it. Where lies your text?

Viola. In Orsino's bosom.

Olivia. In his bosom! In what chapter of his bosom?

Viola. To answer by the method, in the first of his heart.

Olivia. O, I have read it; it is heresy. Have you no more to say?

Viola. Good madam, let me see your face.

Olivia. Have you any commission from your lord to negotiate with my face? You are now out of your text; but we will draw the curtain and show you the picture. Look you, sir, such a one I was this present; is 't not well done? [*Unveiling.*

Viola. Excellently done, if God did all.

Olivia. 'T is in grain, sir; 't will endure wind and weather.

Viola. 'T is beauty truly blent, whose red and white
Nature's own sweet and cunning hand laid on.
Lady, you are the cruell'st she alive,
If you will lead these graces to the grave
And leave the world no copy.

Olivia. O, sir, I will not be so hard-hearted; I will give out divers schedules of my beauty. It shall be inventoried, and every particle and utensil labelled to my will: as, item, two lips, indifferent red; item, two grey eyes, with lids to them; item, one neck, one chin, and so forth. Were you sent hither to praise me?

Viola. I see you what you are, you are too proud;

But, if you were the devil, you are fair.
My lord and master loves you; O, such love
Could be but recompens'd though you were crown'd
The nonpareil of beauty!

Olivia. How does he love me?

Viola. With adorations, with fertile tears,
With groans that thunder love, with sighs of fire.

Olivia. Your lord does know my mind; I cannot love him.
Yet I suppose him virtuous, know him noble,
Of great estate, of fresh and stainless youth;
In voices well divulg'd, free, learn'd, and valiant;
And in dimension and the shape of nature
A gracious person. But yet I cannot love him;
He might have took his answer long ago.

Viola. If I did love you in my master's flame,
With such a suffering, such a deadly life,
In your denial I would find no sense;
I would not understand it.

Olivia. Why, what would you?

Viola. Make me a willow cabin at your gate,
And call upon my soul within the house;
Write loyal cantons of contemned love,
And sing them loud even in the dead of night;
Halloo your name to the reverberate hills,
And make the babbling gossip of the air
Cry out Olivia! O, you should not rest
Between the elements of air and earth,
But you should pity me!

Olivia. You might do much.
What is your parentage?
Viola. Above my fortunes, yet my state is well;
I am a gentleman.
Olivia. Get you to your lord;
I cannot love him. Let him send no more,
Unless, perchance, you come to me again,
To tell me how he takes it. Fare you well.
I thank you for your pains; spend this for me.
Viola. I am no fee'd post, lady, keep your purse;
My master, not myself, lacks recompense.
Love make his heart of flint that you shall love;
And let your fervour, like my master's, be
Plac'd in contempt! Farewell, fair cruelty. [*Exit.*
Olivia. What is your parentage?
'Above my fortunes, yet my state is well;
I am a gentleman.' I 'll be sworn thou art;
Thy tongue, thy face, thy limbs, actions, and spirit,
Do give thee five-fold blazon. — Not too fast! soft, soft!
Unless the master were the man. — How now!
Even so quickly may one catch the plague?
Methinks I feel this youth's perfections
With an invisible and subtle stealth
To creep in at mine eyes. Well, let it be. —
What ho, Malvolio!

Re-enter MALVOLIO

Malvolio. Here, madam, at your service.
Olivia. Run after that same peevish messenger,

The county's man. He left this ring behind him,
Would I or not; tell him I 'll none of it.
Desire him not to flatter with his lord,
Nor hold him up with hopes; I am not for him.
If that the youth will come this way to-morrow,
I 'll give him reasons for 't. Hie thee, Malvolio.

Malvolio. Madam, I will. [*Exit.*

Olivia. I do I know not what, and fear to find
Mine eye too great a flatterer for my mind.
Fate, show thy force! ourselves we do not owe;
What is decreed must be, and be this so! [*Exit.*

THE SEA-COAST NEAR SPALATRO

ACT II

SCENE I. *The Sea-coast*

Enter ANTONIO *and* SEBASTIAN

Antonio. Will you stay no longer? nor will you not that I go with you?

Sebastian. By your patience, no. My stars shine darkly over me; the malignancy of my fate might perhaps distemper yours; therefore I shall crave of you your leave that I may bear my evils alone. It were a bad recompense for your love, to lay any of them on you.

Antonio. Let me yet know of you whither you are bound.

Sebastian. No, sooth, sir; my determinate voyage is mere extravagancy. But I perceive in you so

excellent a touch of modesty that you will not extort from me what I am willing to keep in; therefore it charges me in manners the rather to express myself. You must know of me then, Antonio, my name is Sebastian, which I called Roderigo. My father was that Sebastian of Messaline whom I know you have heard of. He left behind him myself and a sister, both born in an hour. If the heavens had been pleased, would we had so ended! but you, sir, altered that; for some hour before you took me from the breach of the sea was my sister drowned.

Antonio. Alas the day!

Sebastian. A lady, sir, though it was said she much resembled me, was yet of many accounted beautiful; but, though I could not with such estimable wonder overfar believe that, yet thus far I will boldly publish her: she bore a mind that envy could not but call fair. She is drowned already, sir, with salt water, though I seem to drown her remembrance again with more.

Antonio. Pardon me, sir, your bad entertainment.

Sebastian. O good Antonio, forgive me your trouble!

Antonio. If you will not murther me for my love, let me be your servant.

Sebastian. If you will not undo what you have done, that is, kill him whom you have recovered, desire it not. Fare ye well at once; my bosom is full of kindness, and I am yet so near the manners

of my mother that upon the least occasion more mine eyes will tell tales of me. I am bound to the Count Orsino's court; farewell. [*Exit.*

Antonio. The gentleness of all the gods go with thee!
I have many enemies in Orsino's court,
Else would I very shortly see thee there.
But, come what may, I do adore thee so
That danger shall seem sport and I will go. [*Exit.*

Scene II. *A Street*

Enter Viola, Malvolio *following*

Malvolio. Were not you even now with the Countess Olivia?

Viola. Even now, sir; on a moderate pace I have since arrived but hither.

Malvolio. She returns this ring to you, sir; you might have saved me my pains, to have taken it away yourself. She adds, moreover, that you should put your lord into a desperate assurance she will none of him; and one thing more, that you be never so hardy to come again in his affairs unless it be to report your lord's taking of this. Receive it so.

Viola. She took the ring of me; I 'll none of it.

Malvolio. Come, sir, you peevishly threw it to her, and her will is it should be so returned. If it be worth stooping for, there it lies in your eye; if not, be it his that finds it. [*Exit.*

Viola. I left no ring with her; what means this lady?
Fortune forbid my outside have not charm'd her!
She made good view of me; indeed, so much
That sure methought her eyes had lost her tongue,
For she did speak in starts distractedly.
She loves me, sure; the cunning of her passion
Invites me in this churlish messenger.
None of my lord's ring! why, he sent her none.
I am the man; if it be so, as 't is,
Poor lady, she were better love a dream.
Disguise, I see, thou art a wickedness,
Wherein the pregnant enemy does much.
How easy is it for the proper-false
In women's waxen hearts to set their forms!
(Alas, our frailty is the cause, not we!
For such as we are made of, such we be.)
How will this fadge? my master loves her dearly;
And I, poor monster, fond as much on him;
And she, mistaken, seems to dote on me.
What will become of this? As I am man,
My state is desperate for my master's love;
As I am woman, — now alas the day! —
What thriftless sighs shall poor Olivia breathe! —
O time! thou must untangle this, not I;
It is too hard a knot for me to untie! [*Exit.*

Scene III. *Olivia's House*

Enter Sir Toby *and* Sir Andrew

Sir Toby. Approach, Sir Andrew; not to be a-bed after midnight is to be up betimes, and 'diluculo surgere,' thou know'st, —

Sir Andrew. Nay, by my troth, I know not; but I know to be up late is to be up late.

Sir Toby. A false conclusion; I hate it as an unfilled can. To be up after midnight and to go to bed then, is early; so that to go to bed after midnight is to go to bed betimes. Does not our life consist of the four elements?

Sir Andrew. Faith, so they say; but I think it rather consists of eating and drinking.

Sir Toby. Thou 'rt a scholar; let us therefore eat and drink. — Marian, I say! a stoup of wine!

Enter Clown

Sir Andrew. Here comes the fool, i' faith.

Clown. How now, my hearts! did you never see the picture of we three?

Sir Toby. Welcome, ass. Now let 's have a catch.

Sir Andrew. By my troth, the fool has an excellent breast. I had rather than forty shillings I had such a leg, and so sweet a breath to sing, as the fool has. — In sooth, thou wast in very gracious fooling last night, when thou spokest of Pigrogromitus, of the Vapians passing the equinoctial of Queubus; 't was

very good, i' faith. I sent thee sixpence for thy leman; hadst it?

Clown. I did impeticos thy gratillity, for Malvolio's nose is no whipstock; my lady has a white hand, and the Myrmidons are no bottle-ale houses.

Sir Andrew. Excellent! why, this is the best fooling, when all is done. Now, a song.

Sir Toby. Come on; there is sixpence for you; let 's have a song.

Sir Andrew. There 's a testril of me too; if one knight give a —

Clown. Would you have a love-song or a song of good life?

Sir Toby. A love-song, a love-song.

Sir Andrew. Ay, ay; I care not for good life.

Clown. [Sings]

O mistress mine, where are you roaming?
O, stay and hear; your true love 's coming
That can sing both high and low.
Trip no further, pretty sweeting;
Journeys end in lovers meeting,
Every wise man's son doth know.

Sir Andrew. Excellent good, i' faith.

Sir Toby. Good, good.

Clown. [Sings]

What is love? 't is not hereafter;
Present mirth hath present laughter;
What 's to come is still unsure.

In delay there lies no plenty,
Then come kiss me, sweet and twenty;
Youth 's a stuff will not endure.

Sir Andrew. A mellifluous voice, as I am true knight.

Sir Toby. A contagious breath.

Sir Andrew. Very sweet and contagious, i' faith.

Sir Toby. To hear by the nose, it is dulcet in contagion. But shall we make the welkin dance indeed? shall we rouse the night-owl in a catch that will draw three souls out of one weaver? shall we do that?

Sir Andrew. An you love me, let 's do 't; I am dog at a catch.

Clown. By 'r lady, sir, and some dogs will catch well.

Sir Andrew. Most certain. Let our catch be, 'Thou, knave.'

Clown. 'Hold thy peace, thou knave,' knight? I shall be constrained in 't to call thee knave, knight.

Sir Andrew. 'T is not the first time I have constrained one to call me knave. Begin, fool; it begins 'Hold thy peace.'

Clown. I shall never begin if I hold my peace.

Sir Andrew. Good, i' faith. Come, begin. [*Catch sung.*

Enter MARIA

Maria. What a caterwauling do you keep here! If my lady have not called up her steward Malvolio and bid him turn you out of doors, never trust me.

Sir Toby. My lady 's a Cataian, we are politicians, Malvolio 's a Peg-a-Ramsey, and 'Three merry men be we.' Am not I consanguineous? am I not of her blood? Tillyvally, lady! [*Sings*] 'There dwelt a man in Babylon, lady, lady!'

Clown. Beshrew me, the knight 's in admirable fooling.

Sir Andrew. Ay, he does well enough if he be disposed, and so do I too; he does it with a better grace, but I do it more natural.

Sir Toby. [*Sings*] 'O, the twelfth day of December,'—

Maria. For the love of God, peace!

Enter Malvolio

Malvolio. My masters, are you mad? or what are you? Have you no wit, manners, nor honesty, but to gabble like tinkers at this time of night? Do ye make an alehouse of my lady's house, that ye squeak out your coziers' catches without any mitigation or remorse of voice? Is there no respect of place, persons, nor time in you?

Sir Toby. We did keep time, sir, in our catches. Sneck up!

Malvolio. Sir Toby, I must be round with you. My lady bade me tell you that, though she harbours you as her kinsman, she 's nothing allied to your disorders. If you can separate yourself and your misdemeanours, you are welcome to the house; if not,

an it would please you to take leave of her, she is very willing to bid you farewell.

Sir Toby. 'Farewell, dear heart, since I must needs be gone.'

Maria. Nay, good Sir Toby.

Clown. 'His eyes do show his days are almost done.'

Malvolio. Is 't even so?

Sir Toby. 'But I will never die.'

Clown. Sir Toby, there you lie.

Malvolio. This is much credit to you.

Sir Toby. 'Shall I bid him go?'

Clown. 'What an if you do?'

Sir Toby. 'Shall I bid him go, and spare not?'

Clown. 'O, no, no, no, no, you dare not.'

Sir Toby. Out o' time, sir? ye lie. — Art any more than a steward? Dost thou think, because thou art virtuous, there shall be no more cakes and ale?

Clown. Yes, by Saint Anne, and ginger shall be hot i' the mouth too.

Sir Toby. Thou 'rt i' the right. — Go, sir, rub your chain with crumbs. — A stoup of wine, Maria!

Malvolio. Mistress Mary, if you prized my lady's favour at any thing more than contempt, you would not give means for this uncivil rule; she shall know of it, by this hand. [*Exit.*

Maria. Go shake your ears.

Sir Andrew. 'T were as good a deed as to drink

when a man 's a-hungry, to challenge him the field, and then to break promise with him and make a fool of him.

Sir Toby. Do 't, knight! I 'll write thee a challenge; or I 'll deliver thy indignation to him by word of mouth.

Maria. Sweet Sir Toby, be patient for to-night; since the youth of the count's was to-day with my lady, she is much out of quiet. For Monsieur Malvolio, let me alone with him; if I do not gull him into a nayword and make him a common recreation, do not think I have wit enough to lie straight in my bed; I know I can do it.

Sir Toby. Possess us, possess us, tell us something of him.

Maria. Marry, sir, sometimes he is a kind of puritan.

Sir Andrew. O, if I thought that, I 'd beat him like a dog!

Sir Toby. What, for being a puritan? thy exquisite reason, dear knight?

Sir Andrew. I have no exquisite reason for 't, but I have reason good enough.

Maria. The devil a puritan that he is, or any thing constantly but a time-pleaser; an affectioned ass, that cons state without book and utters it by great swarths; the best persuaded of himself, so crammed, as he thinks, with excellencies that it is his ground of faith that all that look on him love

him; and on that vice in him will my revenge find notable cause to work.

Sir Toby. What wilt thou do?

Maria. I will drop in his way some obscure epistles of love, wherein, by the colour of his beard, the shape of his leg, the manner of his gait, the expressure of his eye, forehead, and complexion, he shall find himself most feelingly personated. I can write very like my lady your niece; on a forgotten matter we can hardly make distinction of our hands.

Sir Toby. Excellent! I smell a device.

Sir Andrew. I have 't in my nose too.

Sir Toby. He shall think, by the letters that thou wilt drop, that they come from my niece and that she 's in love with him.

Maria. My purpose is, indeed, a horse of that colour.

Sir Andrew. And your horse now would make him an ass.

Maria. Ass, I doubt not.

Sir Andrew. O, 't will be admirable!

Maria. Sport royal, I warrant you; I know my physic will work with him. I will plant you two, and let the fool make a third, where he shall find the letter; observe his construction of it. For this night, to bed, and dream on the event. Farewell.

[*Exit.*

Sir Toby. Good night, Penthesilea.

Sir Andrew. Before me, she 's a good wench.

Sir Toby. She 's a beagle, true-bred, and one that adores me. What o' that?

Sir Andrew. I was adored once too.

Sir Toby. Let 's to bed, knight. — Thou hadst need send for more money.

Sir Andrew. If I cannot recover your niece, I am a foul way out.

Sir Toby. Send for money, knight; if thou hast her not i' the end, call me cut.

Sir Andrew. If I do not, never trust me, take it how you will.

Sir Toby. Come, come, I 'll go burn some sack; 't is too late to go to bed now. Come, knight; come, knight. [*Exeunt.*

Scene IV. *The Duke's Palace*

Enter Duke, Viola, Curio, *and others*

Duke. Give me some music. — Now, good morrow, friends. —
Now, good Cesario, but that piece of song,
That old and antique song we heard last night.
Methought it did relieve my passion much,
More than light airs and recollected terms
Of these most brisk and giddy-paced times.
Come, but one verse.

Curio. He is not here, so please your lordship, that should sing it.

Duke. Who was it?

Curio. Feste, the jester, my lord; a fool that the lady Olivia's father took much delight in. He is about the house.

Duke. Seek him out, and play the tune the while. — [*Exit Curio. Music plays.*

Come hither, boy. If ever thou shalt love,
In the sweet pangs of it remember me;
For such as I am all true lovers are,
Unstaid and skittish in all motions else,
Save in the constant image of the creature
That is belov'd. How dost thou like this tune?

Viola. It gives a very echo to the seat
Where love is thron'd.

Duke. Thou dost speak masterly.
My life upon 't, young though thou art, thine eye
Hath stay'd upon some favour that it loves;
Hath it not, boy?

Viola. A little, by your favour.

Duke. What kind of woman is 't?

Viola. Of your complexion.

Duke. She is not worth thee, then. What years, i' faith?

Viola. About your years, my lord.

Duke. Too old, by heaven! Let still the woman take
An elder than herself; so wears she to him,
So sways she level in her husband's heart;
For, boy, however we do praise ourselves,
Our fancies are more giddy and unfirm,

More longing, wavering, sooner lost and worn,
Than women's are.

Viola. I think it well, my lord.

Duke. Then let thy love be younger than thyself,
Or thy affection cannot hold the bent;
For women are as roses, whose fair flower,
Being once display'd, doth fall that very hour.

Viola. And so they are; alas, that they are so,
To die, even when they to perfection grow!

Re-enter CURIO *and* Clown

Duke. O, fellow, come, the song we had last night. —
Mark it, Cesario, it is old and plain;
The spinsters and the knitters in the sun
And the free maids that weave their thread with bones
Do use to chant it. It is silly sooth,
And dallies with the innocence of love,
Like the old age.

Clown. Are you ready, sir?

Duke. Ay; prithee, sing. [*Music.*

Song

Clown. *Come away, come away, death,*
And in sad cypress let me be laid.
Fly away, fly away, breath;
I am slain by a fair cruel maid.
My shroud of white, stuck all with yew,
O, prepare it!
My part of death, no one so true
Did share it.

Not a flower, not a flower sweet,
On my black coffin let there be strown;
Not a friend, not a friend greet
My poor corpse, where my bones shall be thrown.
A thousand thousand sighs to save,
Lay me, O, where
Sad true lover never find my grave,
To weep there!

Duke. There 's for thy pains.

Clown. No pains, sir; I take pleasure in singing, sir.

Duke. I 'll pay thy pleasure then.

Clown. Truly, sir, and pleasure will be paid, one time or another.

Duke. Give me now leave to leave thee.

Clown. Now the melancholy god protect thee; and the tailor make thy doublet of changeable taffeta, for thy mind is a very opal! — I would have men of such constancy put to sea, that their business might be every thing and their intent every where; for that 's it that always makes a good voyage of nothing. — Farewell. [*Exit.*

Duke. Let all the rest give place. —

[*Curio and Attendants retire.*

Once more, Cesario,
Get thee to yond same sovereign cruelty.
Tell her, my love, more noble than the world,
Prizes not quantity of dirty lands;

The parts that fortune hath bestow'd upon her,
Tell her, I hold as giddily as fortune,
But 't is that miracle and queen of gems
That nature pranks her in attracts my soul.
Viola. But if she cannot love you, sir?
Duke. I cannot be so answer'd.
Viola. Sooth, but you must.
Say that some lady, as perhaps there is,
Hath for your love as great a pang of heart
As you have for Olivia; you cannot love her.
You tell her so; must she not then be answer'd?
Duke. There is no woman's sides
Can bide the beating of so strong a passion
As love doth give my heart, no woman's heart
So big to hold so much; they lack retention.
Alas, their love may be call'd appetite, —
No motion of the liver, but the palate, —
That suffer surfeit, cloyment, and revolt;
But mine is all as hungry as the sea
And can digest as much. Make no compare
Between that love a woman can bear me
And that I owe Olivia.
Viola. Ay, but I know —
Duke. What dost thou know?
Viola. Too well what love women to men may owe;
In faith, they are as true of heart as we.
My father had a daughter lov'd a man,
As it might be, perhaps, were I a woman,
I should your lordship.

Duke. And what 's her history?

Viola. A blank, my lord. She never told her love,
But let concealment, like a worm i' the bud,
Feed on her damask cheek; she pin'd in thought,
And with a green and yellow melancholy
She sat like Patience on a monument,
Smiling at grief. Was not this love indeed?
We men may say more, swear more, but indeed
Our shows are more than will; for still we prove
Much in our vows, but little in our love.

Duke. But died thy sister of her love, my boy?

Viola. I am all the daughters of my father's house,
And all the brothers too; — and yet I know not.
Sir, shall I to this lady?

Duke. Ay, that 's the theme,
To her in haste; give her this jewel; say,
My love can give no place, bide no denay. [*Exeunt.*

Scene V. *Olivia's Garden*

Enter Sir Toby, Sir Andrew, *and* Fabian

Sir Toby. Come thy ways, Signior Fabian.

Fabian. Nay, I 'll come; if I lose a scruple of this sport, let me be boiled to death with melancholy.

Sir Toby. Wouldst thou not be glad to have the niggardly rascally sheep-biter come by some notable shame?

Fabian. I would exult, man; you know, he brought

me out o' favour with my lady about a bear-baiting here.

Sir Toby. To anger him we 'll have the bear again, and we will fool him black and blue; — shall we not, Sir Andrew?

Sir Andrew. An we do not, it is pity of our lives.

Sir Toby. Here comes the little villain. —

Enter Maria

How now, my metal of India!

Maria. Get ye all three into the box-tree; Malvolio 's coming down this walk. He has been yonder i' the sun practising behaviour to his own shadow this half hour; observe him, for the love of mockery, for I know this letter will make a contemplative idiot of him. Close, in the name of jesting! — Lie thou there [*throws down a letter*]; for here comes the trout that must be caught with tickling. [*Exit.*

Enter Malvolio

Malvolio. 'T is but fortune; all is fortune. Maria once told me she did affect me; and I have heard herself come thus near, that, should she fancy, it should be one of my complexion. Besides, she uses me with a more exalted respect than any one else that follows her. What should I think on 't?

Sir Toby. Here 's an overweening rogue!

Fabian. O, peace! Contemplation makes a rare turkey-cock of him! how he jets under his advanced plumes!

Sir Andrew. 'Slight, I could so beat the rogue!

Sir Toby. Peace, I say!

Malvolio. To be Count Malvolio!

Sir Toby. Ah, rogue!

Sir Andrew. Pistol him, pistol him.

Sir Toby. Peace, peace!

Malvolio. There is example for 't; the lady of the Strachy married the yeoman of the wardrobe.

Sir Andrew. Fie on him, Jezebel!

Fabian. O, peace! now he 's deeply in; look how imagination blows him.

Malvolio. Having been three months married to her, sitting in my state,—

Sir Toby. O for a stone-bow, to hit him in the eye!

Malvolio. Calling my officers about me, in my branched velvet gown; having come from a day-bed, where I have left Olivia sleeping,—

Sir Toby. Fire and brimstone!

Fabian. O, peace, peace!

Malvolio. And then to have the humour of state; and after a demure travel of regard, telling them I know my place as I would they should do theirs, to ask for my kinsman Toby,—

Sir Toby. Bolts and shackles!

Fabian. O, peace, peace, peace! now, now.

Malvolio. Seven of my people, with an obedient start, make out for him; I frown the while, and perchance wind up my watch, or play with my—some

rich jewel. Toby approaches, courtesies there to me, —

Sir Toby. Shall this fellow live?

Fabian. Though our silence be drawn from us by th' ears, yet peace.

Malvolio. I extend my hand to him thus, quenching my familiar smile with an austere regard of control, —

Sir Toby. And does not Toby take you a blow o' the lips then?

Malvolio. Saying, 'Cousin Toby, my fortunes having cast me on your niece give me this prerogative of speech,' —

Sir Toby. What, what?

Malvolio. 'You must amend your drunkenness.'

Sir Toby. Out, scab!

Fabian. Nay, patience, or we break the sinews of our plot.

Malvolio. 'Besides, you waste the treasure of your time with a foolish knight,' —

Sir Andrew. That 's me, I warrant you.

Malvolio. 'One Sir Andrew,' —

Sir Andrew. I knew 'twas I; for many do call me fool.

Malvolio. What employment have we here?

[*Taking up the letter.*

Fabian. Now is the woodcock near the gin.

Sir Toby. O, peace! and the spirit of humours intimate reading aloud to him!

Malvolio. By my life, this is my lady's hand: these be her very C's, her U's, and her T's; and thus makes she her great P's. It is, in contempt of question, her hand.

Sir Andrew. Her C's, her U's, and her T's; why that?

Malvolio. [Reads] '*To the unknown beloved, this, and my good wishes.*'—Her very phrases!—By your leave, wax.—Soft! and the impressure her Lucrece, with which she uses to seal; 't is my lady. To whom should this be?

Fabian. This wins him, liver and all.

Malvolio. [Reads]

'*Jove knows I love;*
But who?
Lips, do not move;
No man must know.'

'No man must know.'—What follows? the numbers altered!—'No man must know.'—If this should be thee, Malvolio?

Sir Toby. Marry, hang thee, brock!

Malvolio. [Reads]

'*I may command where I adore,*
But silence, like a Lucrece knife,
With bloodless stroke my heart doth gore;
M, O, A, I, doth sway my life.'

Fabian. A fustian riddle!

Sir Toby. Excellent wench, say I.

Malvolio. '*M*, *O*, *A*, *I*, doth sway my life.' — Nay, but first, let me see, let me see, let me see.

Fabian. What dish o' poison has she dressed him!

Sir Toby. And with what wing the staniel checks at it!

Malvolio. 'I may command where I adore.' — Why, she may command me; I serve her, she is my lady. Why, this is evident to any formal capacity; there is no obstruction in this; and the end, — what should that alphabetical position portend? If I could make that resemble something in me, — Softly! *M*, *O*, *A*, *I*, —

Sir Toby. O, ay, make up that! — he is now at a cold scent.

Fabian. Sowter will cry upon 't for all this, though it be as rank as a fox.

Malvolio. *M*, — Malvolio; *M*, — why, that begins my name.

Fabian. Did not I say he would work it out? the cur is excellent at faults.

Malvolio. *M*, — but then there is no consonancy in the sequel; that suffers under probation. *A* should follow, but *O* does.

Fabian. And *O* shall end, I hope.

Sir Toby. Ay, or I 'll cudgel him, and make him cry O!

Malvolio. And then *I* comes behind.

Fabian. Ay, an you had any eye behind you, you might see more detraction at your heels than fortunes before you.

Malvolio. *M, O, A, I,* — this simulation is not as the former; and yet, to crush this a little, it would bow to me, for every one of these letters are in my name. Soft! here follows prose.

[Reads] '*If this fall into thy hand, revolve. In my stars I am above thee, but be not afraid of greatness; some are born great, some achieve greatness, and some have greatness thrust upon 'em. Thy Fates open their hands, let thy blood and spirit embrace them; and, to inure thyself to what thou art like to be, cast thy humble slough and appear fresh. Be opposite with a kinsman, surly with servants; let thy tongue tang arguments of state; put thyself into the trick of singularity; she thus advises thee that sighs for thee. Remember who commended thy yellow stockings, and wished to see thee ever cross-gartered; I say, remember. Go to, thou art made, if thou desirest to be so; if not, let me see thee a steward still, the fellow of servants, and not worthy to touch Fortune's fingers. Farewell. She that would alter services with thee,*

THE FORTUNATE-UNHAPPY.'

Daylight and champaign discovers not more; this is open. I will be proud, I will read politic authors, I will baffle Sir Toby, I will wash off gross acquaintance, I will be point-devise the very man. I do not now fool myself, to let imagination jade me; for every

reason excites to this, that my lady loves me. She did commend my yellow stockings of late, she did praise my leg being cross-gartered; and in this she manifests herself to my love, and with a kind of injunction drives me to these habits of her liking. I thank my stars I am happy. I will be strange, stout, in yellow stockings, and cross-gartered, even with the swiftness of putting on. Jove and my stars be praised! Here is yet a postscript.

[Reads] '*Thou canst not choose but know who I am. If thou entertainest my love, let it appear in thy smiling; thy smiles become thee well, therefore in my presence still smile, dear my sweet, I prithee.*'

Jove, I thank thee! — I will smile; I will do everything that thou wilt have me. [*Exit.*

Fabian. I will not give my part of this sport for a pension of thousands to be paid from the Sophy.

Sir Toby. I could marry this wench for this device.

Sir Andrew. So could I too.

Sir Toby. And ask no other dowry with her but such another jest.

Sir Andrew. Nor I neither.

Fabian. Here comes my noble gull-catcher.

Re-enter MARIA

Sir Toby. Wilt thou set thy foot o' my neck?

Sir Andrew. Or o' mine either?

Sir Toby. Shall I play my freedom at tray-trip and become thy bond-slave?

Sir Andrew. I' faith, or I either?

Sir Toby. Why, thou hast put him in such a dream that when the image of it leaves him he must run mad.

Maria. Nay, but say true; does it work upon him?

Sir Toby. Like aqua-vitæ with a midwife.

Maria. If you will then see the fruits of the sport, mark his first approach before my lady. He will come to her in yellow stockings, — and 't is a colour she abhors; and cross-gartered, a fashion she detests; and he will smile upon her, which will now be so unsuitable to her disposition, being addicted to a melancholy as she is, that it cannot but turn him into a notable contempt. If you will see it, follow me.

Sir Toby. To the gates of Tartar, thou most excellent devil of wit!

Sir Andrew. I 'll make one too. [*Exeunt.*

OLIVIA'S GARDEN

ACT III

SCENE I. *Olivia's Garden*

Enter VIOLA *and* CLOWN *with a tabor*

Viola. Save thee, friend, and thy music! Dost thou live by thy tabor?

Clown. No, sir, I live by the church.

Viola. Art thou a churchman?

Clown. No such matter, sir. I do live by the church; for I do live at my house, and my house doth stand by the church.

Viola. So thou mayst say, the king lies by a beggar, if a beggar dwell near him; or the church stands by thy tabor, if thy tabor stand by the church. 10

Clown. You have said, sir. — To see this age! — A sentence is but a cheveril glove to a good wit; how quickly the wrong side may be turned outward!

Viola. Nay, that 's certain; they that dally nicely with words may quickly make them wanton.

Clown. I would, therefore, my sister had had no name, sir.

Viola. Why, man?

Clown. Why, sir, her name 's a word; and to dally with that word might make my sister wanton. But indeed words are very rascals since bonds disgraced them.

Viola. Thy reason, man?

Clown. Troth, sir, I can yield you none without words, and words are grown so false I am loath to prove reason with them.

Viola. I warrant thou art a merry fellow and carest for nothing.

Clown. Not so, sir, I do care for something, but in my conscience, sir, I do not care for you; if that be to care for nothing, sir, I would it would make you invisible.

Viola. Art not thou the Lady Olivia's fool?

Clown. No, indeed, sir; the Lady Olivia has no folly. She will keep no fool, sir, till she be married; and fools are as like husbands as pilchards are to herrings, the husband 's the bigger. I am indeed not her fool, but her corrupter of words.

Viola. I saw thee late at the Count Orsino's.

Clown. Foolery, sir, does walk about the orb like the sun, it shines every where. I would be sorry, sir, but the fool should be as oft with your master as with my mistress. I think I saw your wisdom there.

Viola. Nay, an thou pass upon me, I 'll no more with thee. Hold, there 's expenses for thee.

Clown. Now Jove, in his next commodity of hair, send thee a beard!

Viola. By my troth, I 'll tell thee, I am almost sick for one; [*Aside*] though I would not have it grow on my chin. Is thy lady within?

Clown. Would not a pair of these have bred, sir?

Viola. Yes, being kept together and put to use.

Clown. I would play Lord Pandarus of Phrygia, sir, to bring a Cressida to this Troilus.

Viola. I understand you, sir; 't is well begged.

Clown. The matter, I hope, is not great, sir, begging but a beggar; Cressida was a beggar. My lady is within, sir. I will construe to them whence you come; who you are and what you would are out of my welkin, — I might say element, but the word is overworn. [*Exit.*

Viola. This fellow is wise enough to play the fool;
And to do that well craves a kind of wit.
He must observe their mood on whom he jests,
The quality of persons and the time,
Not, like the haggard, check at every feather
That comes before his eye. This is a practice

As full of labour as a wise man's art;
For folly that he wisely shows is fit,
But wise men's folly shown quite taints their wit.

Enter Sir Toby *and* Sir Andrew

Sir Toby. Save you, gentleman.

Viola. And you, sir.

Sir Andrew. Dieu vous garde, monsieur.

Viola. Et vous aussi; votre serviteur.

Sir Andrew. I hope, sir, you are; and I am yours.

Sir Toby. Will you encounter the house? my niece is desirous you should enter, if your trade be to her.

Viola. I am bound to your niece, sir; I mean, she is the list of my voyage.

Sir Toby. Taste your legs, sir; put them to motion.

Viola. My legs do better understand me, sir, than I understand what you mean by bidding me taste my legs.

Sir Toby. I mean, to go, sir, to enter.

Viola. I will answer you with gait and entrance. But we are prevented. —

Enter Olivia *and* Maria

Most excellent accomplished lady, the heavens rain odours on you!

Sir Andrew. That youth 's a rare courtier. 'Rain odours!' well!

Viola. My matter hath no voice, lady, but to your own most pregnant and vouchsafed ear.

Sir Andrew. 'Odours,' 'pregnant,' and 'vouchsafed!' I 'll get 'em all three all ready.

Olivia. Let the garden door be shut, and leave me to my hearing. — [*Exeunt Sir Toby, Sir Andrew, and Maria.*] Give me your hand, sir.

Viola. My duty, madam, and most humble service.

Olivia. What is your name?

Viola. Cesario is your servant's name, fair princess.

Olivia. My servant, sir! 't was never merry world
Since lowly feigning was call'd compliment;
You 're servant to the Count Orsino, youth.

Viola. And he is yours, and his must needs be yours;
Your servant's servant is your servant, madam.

Olivia. For him, I think not on him; for his thoughts,
Would they were blanks rather than fill'd with me!

Viola. Madam, I come to whet your gentle thoughts
On his behalf.

Olivia. O, by your leave, I pray you,
I bade you never speak again of him;
But, would you undertake another suit,
I had rather hear you to solicit that
Than music from the spheres.

Viola. Dear lady, —

Olivia. Give me leave, beseech you. I did send,
After the last enchantment you did here,
A ring in chase of you; so did I abuse

Myself, my servant, and, I fear me, you.
Under your hard construction must I sit,
To force that on you, in a shameful cunning,
Which you knew none of yours; what might you think?
Have you not set mine honour at the stake,
And baited it with all the unmuzzled thoughts
That tyrannous heart can think? To one of your receiving
Enough is shown; a cypress, not a bosom,
Hideth my heart. So, let me hear you speak.
Viola. I pity you.
Olivia. That 's a degree to love.
Viola. No, not a grise; for 't is a vulgar proof
That very oft we pity enemies.
Olivia. Why, then, methinks 't is time to smile again.
O world, how apt the poor are to be proud!
If one should be a prey, how much the better
To fall before the lion than the wolf! [*Clock strikes.*
The clock upbraids me with the waste of time. —
Be not afraid, good youth, I will not have you;
And yet, when wit and youth is come to harvest,
Your wife is like to reap a proper man. —
There lies your way, due west.
Viola. Then westward-ho!
Grace and good disposition attend your ladyship!
You 'll nothing, madam, to my lord by me?
Olivia. Stay!
I prithee, tell me what thou think'st of me.

Viola. That you do think you are not what you are.
Olivia. If I think so, I think the same of you.
Viola. Then think you right; I am not what I am.
Olivia. I would you were as I would have you be!
Viola. Would it be better, madam, than I am?
I wish it might, for now I am your fool.
Olivia. O, what a deal of scorn looks beautiful
In the contempt and anger of his lip!
A murtherous guilt shows not itself more soon
Than love that would seem hid; love's night is noon. —
Cesario, by the roses of the spring,
By maidhood, honour, truth, and every thing,
I love thee so that, maugre all thy pride,
Nor wit nor reason can my passion hide.
Do not extort thy reasons from this clause,
For that I woo, thou therefore hast no cause;
But rather reason thus with reason fetter, —
Love sought is good, but given unsought is better.
Viola. By innocence I swear, and by my youth,
I have one heart, one bosom, and one truth,
And that no woman has; nor never none
Shall mistress be of it, save I alone.
And so adieu, good madam; never more
Will I my master's tears to you deplore.
Olivia. Yet come again; for thou perhaps mayst move
That heart, which now abhors, to like his love.

[*Exeunt.*

Scene II. *Olivia's House*

Enter Sir Toby, Sir Andrew, *and* Fabian

Sir Andrew. No, faith, I 'll not stay a jot longer.

Sir Toby. Thy reason, dear venom, give thy reason.

Fabian. You must needs yield your reason, Sir Andrew.

Sir Andrew. Marry, I saw your niece do more favours to the count's serving-man than ever she bestowed upon me; I saw 't i' the orchard.

Sir Toby. Did she see thee the while, old boy? tell me that.

Sir Andrew. As plain as I see you now.

Fabian. This was a great argument of love in her toward you.

Sir Andrew. 'Slight! will you make an ass o' me?

Fabian. I will prove it legitimate, sir, upon the oaths of judgment and reason.

Sir Toby. And they have been grand-jurymen since before Noah was a sailor.

Fabian. She did show favour to the youth in your sight only to exasperate you, to awake your dormouse valour, to put fire in your heart and brimstone in your liver. You should then have accosted her; and with some excellent jests, fire-new from the mint, you should have banged the youth into dumbness. This was looked for at your hand, and this

was balked; the double gilt of this opportunity you let time wash off and you are now sailed into the north of my lady's opinion, where you will hang like an icicle on a Dutchman's beard, unless you do redeem it by some laudable attempt either of valour or policy.

Sir Andrew. An 't be any way, it must be with valour, for policy I hate; I had as lief be a Brownist as a politician.

Sir Toby. Why, then, build me thy fortunes upon the basis of valour. Challenge me the count's youth to fight with him; hurt him in eleven places. My niece shall take note of it; and assure thyself, there is no love-broker in the world can more prevail in man's commendation with woman than report of valour.

Fabian. There is no way but this, Sir Andrew.

Sir Andrew. Will either of you bear me a challenge to him?

Sir Toby. Go, write it in a martial hand; be curst and brief; it is no matter how witty, so it be eloquent and full of invention; taunt him with the license of ink; if thou thou'st him some thrice, it shall not be amiss; and as many lies as will lie in thy sheet of paper, although the sheet were big enough for the bed of Ware in England, set 'em down; go, about it. Let there be gall enough in thy ink, though thou write with a goose-pen, no matter; about it.

Sir Andrew. Where shall I find you ?

Sir Toby. We 'll call thee at the cubiculo ; go.

[*Exit Sir Andrew.*

Fabian. This is a dear manikin to you, Sir Toby.

Sir Toby. I have been dear to him, lad, some two thousand strong, or so.

Fabian. We shall have a rare letter from him ; but you 'll not deliver 't ?

Sir Toby. Never trust me, then ; and by all means stir on the youth to an answer. I think oxen and wainropes cannot hale them together. For Andrew if he were opened, and you find so much blood in his liver as will clog the foot of a flea, I 'll eat the rest of the anatomy.

Fabian. And his opposite, the youth, bears in his visage no great presage of cruelty.

Enter Maria

Sir Toby. Look, where the youngest wren of nine comes.

Maria. If you desire the spleen, and will laugh yourselves into stitches, follow me. Yond gull Malvolio is turned heathen, a very renegado ; for there is no Christian that means to be saved by believing rightly can ever believe such impossible passages of grossness. He 's in yellow stockings.

Sir Toby. And cross-gartered ?

Maria. Most villanously, like a pedant that keeps a school i' the church. I have dogged him like his

murtherer. He does obey every point of the letter that I dropped to betray him; he does smile his face into more lines than is in the new map with the augmentation of the Indies; you have not seen such a thing as 't is. I can hardly forbear hurling things at him. I know my lady will strike him; if she do, he 'll smile and take 't for a great favour.

Sir Toby. Come, bring us, bring us where he is.

[*Exeunt.*

Scene III. *A Street*

Enter Sebastian *and* Antonio

Sebastian. I would not by my will have troubled you;
But, since you make your pleasure of your pains,
I will no further chide you.

Antonio. I could not stay behind you. My desire,
More sharp than filed steel, did spur me forth;
And not all love to see you, though so much
As might have drawn one to a longer voyage,
But jealousy what might befall your travel,
Being skilless in these parts, which to a stranger,
Unguided and unfriended, often prove
Rough and unhospitable. My willing love,
The rather by these arguments of fear,
Set forth in your pursuit.

Sebastian. My kind Antonio,
I can no other answer make but thanks,
And thanks, and ever thanks, — and oft good turns

Are shuffled off with such uncurrent pay;
But, were my worth as is my conscience firm,
You should find better dealing. What 's to do?
Shall we go see the reliques of this town?

Antonio. To-morrow, sir; best first go see your lodging.

Sebastian. I am not weary, and 't is long to night;
I pray you, let us satisfy our eyes
With the memorials and the things of fame
That do renown this city.

Antonio. Would you 'd pardon me!
I do not without danger walk these streets.
Once, in a sea-fight, 'gainst the count his galleys
I did some service; of such note indeed
That were I ta'en here it would scarce be answer'd.

Sebastian. Belike you slew great number of his people.

Antonio. The offence is not of such a bloody nature,
Albeit the quality of the time and quarrel
Might well have given us bloody argument.
It might have since been answer'd in repaying
What we took from them, which, for traffic's sake,
Most of our city did; only myself stood out,
For which, if I be lapsed in this place,
I shall pay dear.

Sebastian. Do not then walk too open.

Antonio. It doth not fit me. Hold, sir, here 's my purse.

In the south suburbs, at the Elephant,
Is best to lodge. I will bespeak our diet
Whiles you beguile the time and feed your knowledge
With viewing of the town; there shall you have me.

Sebastian. Why I your purse?

Antonio. Haply your eye shall light upon some toy
You have desire to purchase; and your store,
I think, is not for idle markets, sir.

Sebastian. I 'll be your purse-bearer and leave you
For an hour.

Antonio. To the Elephant.

Sebastian. I do remember. [*Exeunt.*

Scene IV. *Olivia's Garden*

Enter Olivia *and* Maria

Olivia. I have sent after him; he says he 'll come.
How shall I feast him? what bestow of him?
For youth is bought more oft than begg'd or borrow'd.
I speak too loud. —
Where is Malvolio? — he is sad and civil,
And suits well for a servant with my fortunes, —
Where is Malvolio?

Maria. He 's coming, madam, but in very strange manner. He is, sure, possessed, madam.

Olivia. Why, what 's the matter? does he rave?

Maria. No, madam, he does nothing but smile. Your ladyship were best to have some guard about you if he come, for, sure, the man is tainted in 's wits.

Olivia. Go call him hither. — [*Exit Maria.*] I am as mad as he,
If sad and merry madness equal be. —

Re-enter MARIA *with* MALVOLIO

How now, Malvolio!

Malvolio. Sweet lady, ho, ho!

Olivia. Smilest thou?
I sent for thee upon a sad occasion.

Malvolio. Sad, lady! I could be sad; this does make some obstruction in the blood, this cross-gartering, but what of that? if it please the eye of one, it is with me as the very true sonnet is, 'Please one, and please all.'

Olivia. Why, how dost thou, man? what is the matter with thee?

Malvolio. Not black in my mind, though yellow in my legs. — It did come to his hands, and commands shall be executed; I think we do know the sweet Roman hand.

Olivia. Wilt thou go to bed, Malvolio?

Malvolio. To bed! ay, sweet-heart, and I 'll come to thee.

Olivia. God comfort thee! Why dost thou smile so and kiss thy hand so oft?

Maria. How do you, Malvolio?

Malvolio. At your request! yes; nightingales answer daws.

Maria. Why appear you with this ridiculous boldness before my lady?

Malvolio. 'Be not afraid of greatness;'— 't was well writ.

Olivia. What meanest thou by that, Malvolio?

Malvolio. 'Some are born great,'—

Olivia. Ha!

Malvolio. 'Some achieve greatness,'—

Olivia. What sayest thou?

Malvolio. 'And some have greatness thrust upon them.'

Olivia. Heaven restore thee!

Malvolio. 'Remember who commended thy yellow stockings,'—

Olivia. Thy yellow stockings!

Malvolio. 'And wished to see thee cross-gartered.'

Olivia. Cross-gartered!

Malvolio. 'Go to, thou art made, if thou desirest to be so;'—

Olivia. Am I made?

Malvolio. 'If not, let me see thee a servant still.'

Olivia. Why, this is very midsummer madness.

Enter Servant

Servant. Madam, the young gentleman of the Count Orsino's is returned; I could hardly entreat him back. He attends your ladyship's pleasure.

Olivia. I 'll come to him. — [*Exit Servant.*] Good Maria, let this fellow be looked to. Where 's my cousin Toby? Let some of my people have a special

care of him; I would not have him miscarry for the half of my dowry. [*Exeunt Olivia and Maria.*

Malvolio. O, ho! do you come near me now? no worse man than Sir Toby to look to me! This concurs directly with the letter; she sends him on purpose, that I may appear stubborn to him, for she incites me to that in the letter. 'Cast thy humble slough,' says she; 'be opposite with a kinsman, surly with servants; let thy tongue tang with arguments of state; put thyself into the trick of singularity;' and consequently sets down the manner how: as, a sad face, a reverend carriage, a slow tongue, in the habit of some sir of note, and so forth. I have limed her; but it is Jove's doing, and Jove make me thankful! And when she went away now, 'Let this fellow be looked to;' fellow! not Malvolio, nor after my degree, but fellow. Why, every thing adheres together, that no dram of a scruple, no scruple of a scruple, no obstacle, no incredulous or unsafe circumstance, — what can be said? Nothing that can be can come between me and the full prospect of my hopes. Well, Jove, not I, is the doer of this, and he is to be thanked.

Re-enter Maria, *with* Sir Toby *and* Fabian

Sir Toby. Which way is he, in the name of sanctity? If all the devils of hell be drawn in little and Legion himself possessed him, yet I 'll speak to him.

Fabian. Here he is, here he is. — How is 't with you, sir? how is 't with you, man?

Malvolio. Go off; I discard you. Let me enjoy my private; go off.

Maria. Lo, how hollow the fiend speaks within him! did not I tell you? — Sir Toby, my lady prays you to have a care of him.

Malvolio. Ah, ha! does she so?

Sir Toby. Go to, go to; peace, peace! we must deal gently with him; let me alone. — How do you, Malvolio? how is 't with you? What, man! defy the devil; consider, he 's an enemy to mankind.

Malvolio. Do you know what you say?

Maria. La you, an you speak ill of the devil, how he takes it at heart! Pray God, he be not bewitched!

Fabian. Carry his water to the wise woman.

Maria. Marry, and it shall be done to-morrow morning, if I live. My lady would not lose him for more than I 'll say.

Malvolio. How now, mistress!

Maria. O Lord!

Sir Toby. Prithee, hold thy peace; this is not the way; do you not see you move him? let me alone with him.

Fabian. No way but gentleness; gently, gently! the fiend is rough and will not be roughly used.

Sir Toby. Why, how now, my bawcock! how dost thou, chuck?

Malvolio. Sir!

Sir Toby. Ay, Biddy, come with me. What, man! 't is not for gravity to play at cherry-pit with Satan. Hang him, foul collier!

Maria. Get him to say his prayers, good Sir Toby, get him to pray.

Malvolio. My prayers, minx!

Maria. No, I warrant you, he will not hear of godliness.

Malvolio. Go, hang yourselves all! you are idle shallow things. I am not of your element; you shall know more hereafter. [*Exit.*

Sir Toby. Is 't possible?

Fabian. If this were played upon a stage now, I could condemn it as an improbable fiction.

Sir Toby. His very genius hath taken the infection of the device, man.

Maria. Nay, pursue him now, lest the device take air and taint.

Fabian. Why, we shall make him mad indeed.

Maria. The house will be the quieter.

Sir Toby. Come, we 'll have him in a dark room and bound. My niece is already in the belief that he 's mad. We may carry it thus, for our pleasure and his penance, till our very pastime, tired out of breath, prompt us to have mercy on him; at which time we will bring the device to the bar, and crown thee for a finder of madmen. But see, but see.

Enter Sir Andrew

Fabian. More matter for a May morning.

Sir Andrew. Here 's the challenge, read it; I warrant there 's vinegar and pepper in 't.

Fabian. Is 't so saucy?

Sir Andrew. Ay, is 't, I warrant him; do but read.

Sir Toby. Give me. [Reads] '*Youth, whatever thou art, thou art but a scurvy fellow.*'

Fabian. Good, and valiant.

Sir Toby. [Reads] '*Wonder not, nor admire not in thy mind, why I do call thee so, for I will show thee no reason for 't.*'

Fabian. A good note; that keeps you from the blow of the law.

Sir Toby. [Reads] '*Thou comest to the Lady Olivia, and in my sight she uses thee kindly. But thou liest in thy throat; that is not the matter I challenge thee for.*'

Fabian. Very brief, and to exceeding good sense — less.

Sir Toby. [Reads] '*I will waylay thee going home, where if it be thy chance to kill me,*' —

Fabian. Good.

Sir Toby. [Reads] '*Thou killest me like a rogue and a villain.*'

Fabian. Still you keep o' the windy side of the law; good.

Sir Toby. [Reads] '*Fare thee well; and God have mercy upon one of our souls! He may have mercy*

upon mine; but my hope is better, and so look to thyself. Thy friend, as thou usest him, and thy sworn enemy, ANDREW AGUECHEEK.'

If this letter move him not, his legs cannot; I 'll give 't him.

Maria. You may have very fit occasion for 't; he is now in some commerce with my lady, and will by and by depart.

Sir Toby. Go, Sir Andrew; scout me for him at the corner of the orchard like a bum-baily. So soon as ever thou seest him, draw, and, as thou drawest, swear horrible; for it comes to pass oft that a terrible oath, with a swaggering accent sharply twanged off, gives manhood more approbation than ever proof itself would have earned him. Away!

Sir Andrew. Nay, let me alone for swearing. [*Exit.*

Sir Toby. Now will not I deliver his letter, for the behaviour of the young gentleman gives him out to be of good capacity and breeding; his employment between his lord and my niece confirms no less. Therefore this letter, being so excellently ignorant, will breed no terror in the youth; he will find it comes from a clodpole. But, sir, I will deliver his challenge by word of mouth, set upon Aguecheek a notable report of valour, and drive the gentleman, as I know his youth will aptly receive it, into a most hideous opinion of his rage, skill, fury, and impetuosity. This will so fright them both that they will kill one another by the look, like cockatrices.

Re-enter OLIVIA *with* VIOLA

Fabian. Here he comes with your niece; give them way till he take leave, and presently after him.

Sir Toby. I will meditate the while upon some horrid message for a challenge.

[*Exeunt Sir Toby, Fabian, and Maria.*

Olivia. I have said too much unto a heart of stone,
And laid mine honour too unchary on 't.
There 's something in me that reproves my fault,
But such a headstrong potent fault it is
That it but mocks reproof.

Viola. With the same haviour that your passion bears
Goes on my master's grief.

Olivia. Here, wear this jewel for me, 't is my picture.
Refuse it not, it hath no tongue to vex you;
And I beseech you come again to-morrow.
What shall you ask of me that I 'll deny,
That honour sav'd may upon asking give?

Viola. Nothing but this, — your true love for my master.

Olivia. How with mine honour may I give him that
Which I have given to you?

Viola. I will acquit you.

Olivia. Well, come again to-morrow. Fare thee well;
A fiend like thee might bear my soul to hell. [*Exit.*

Re-enter Sir Toby *and* Fabian

Sir Toby. Gentleman, God save thee.

Viola. And you, sir.

Sir Toby. That defence thou hast, betake thee to 't. Of what nature the wrongs are thou hast done him, I know not; but thy intercepter, full of despite, bloody as the hunter, attends thee at the orchard-end. Dismount thy tuck, be yare in thy preparation, for thy assailant is quick, skilful, and deadly.

Viola. You mistake, sir, I am sure no man hath any quarrel to me; my remembrance is very free and clear from any image of offence done to any man.

Sir Toby. You 'll find it otherwise, I assure you; therefore, if you hold your life at any price, betake you to your guard, for your opposite hath in him what youth, strength, skill, and wrath can furnish man withal.

Viola. I pray you, sir, what is he?

Sir Toby. He is knight, dubbed with unhatched rapier and on carpet consideration, but he is a devil in private brawl; souls and bodies hath he divorced three, and his incensement at this moment is so implacable that satisfaction can be none but by pangs of death and sepulchre. Hob, nob, is his word; give 't or take 't.

Viola. I will return again into the house and desire some conduct of the lady. I am no fighter. I have heard of some kind of men that put quarrels pur-

posely on others, to taste their valour; belike this is a man of that quirk.

Sir Toby. Sir, no; his indignation derives itself out of a very competent injury; therefore, get you on and give him his desire. Back you shall not to the house, unless you undertake that with me which with as much safety you might answer him; therefore, on, or strip your sword stark naked, for meddle you must, that 's certain, or forswear to wear iron about you.

Viola. This is as uncivil as strange. I beseech you, do me this courteous office, as to know of the knight what my offence to him is; it is something of my negligence, nothing of my purpose.

Sir Toby. I will do so. — Signior Fabian, stay you by this gentleman till my return. [*Exit.*

Viola. Pray you, sir, do you know of this matter?

Fabian. I know the knight is incensed against you, even to a mortal arbitrement, but nothing of the circumstance more.

Viola. I beseech you, what manner of man is he?

Fabian. Nothing of that wonderful promise, to read him by his form, as you are like to find him in the proof of his valour. He is, indeed, sir, the most skilful, bloody, and fatal opposite that you could possibly have found in any part of Illyria. Will you walk towards him? I will make your peace with him if I can.

Viola. I shall be much bound to you for 't. I am

one that had rather go with sir priest than sir knight; I care not who knows so much of my mettle. [*Exeunt.*

Re-enter Sir Toby, *with* Sir Andrew

Sir Toby. Why, man, he 's a very devil; I have not seen such a firago. I had a pass with him, rapier, scabbard, and all, and he gives me the stuck in with such a mortal motion that it is inevitable; and on the answer, he pays you as surely as your feet hit the ground they step on. They say he has been fencer to the Sophy.

Sir Andrew. Pox on 't, I 'll not meddle with him.

Sir Toby. Ay, but he will not now be pacified; Fabian can scarce hold him yonder.

Sir Andrew. Plague on 't, an I thought he had been valiant and so cunning in fence, I 'd have seen him damned ere I 'd have challenged him. Let him let the matter slip, and I 'll give him my horse, grey Capilet.

Sir Toby. I 'll make the motion. Stand here, make a good show on 't; this shall end without the perdition of souls. [*Aside*] Marry, I 'll ride your horse as well as I ride you. —

Re-enter Fabian *and* Viola

[*To Fabian*] I have his horse to take up the quarrel; I have persuaded him the youth 's a devil.

Fabian. He is as horribly conceited of him, and pants and looks pale, as if a bear were at his heels.

Sir Toby. [*To Viola*] There 's no remedy, sir; he will fight with you for 's oath sake. Marry, he hath better bethought him of his quarrel, and he finds that now scarce to be worth talking of; therefore draw, for the supportance of his vow; he protests he will not hurt you.

Viola. [*Aside*] Pray God defend me! A little thing would make me tell them how much I lack of a man.

Fabian. Give ground, if you see him furious.

Sir Toby. Come, Sir Andrew, there 's no remedy; the gentleman will, for his honour's sake, have one bout with you. He cannot by the duello avoid it; but he has promised me, as he is a gentleman and a soldier, he will not hurt you. Come on; to 't.

Sir Andrew. Pray God, he keep his oath!

Viola. I do assure you, 't is against my will. [*They draw.*

Enter Antonio

Antonio. Put up your sword. If this young gentleman
Have done offence, I take the fault on me;
If you offend him, I for him defy you.

Sir Toby. You, sir! why, what are you?

Antonio. One, sir, that for his love dares yet do more
Than you have heard him brag to you he will.

Sir Toby. Nay, if you be an undertaker, I am for you. [*They draw.*

Enter Officers

Fabian. O good Sir Toby, hold! here come the officers.

Sir Toby. I 'll be with you anon.

Viola. Pray, sir, put your sword up, if you please.

Sir Andrew. Marry, will I, sir, and, for that I promised you, I 'll be as good as my word; he will bear you easily and reins well.

1 *Officer.* This is the man; do thy office.

2 *Officer.* Antonio, I arrest thee at the suit of Count Orsino.

Antonio. You do mistake me, sir.

1 *Officer.* No, sir, no jot; I know your favour well,
Though now you have no sea-cap on your head. —
Take him away; he knows I know him well.

Antonio. I must obey. — [*To Viola*] This comes with seeking you.
But there 's no remedy; I shall answer it.
What will you do, now my necessity
Makes me to ask you for my purse? It grieves me
Much more for what I cannot do for you
Than what befalls myself. You stand amaz'd;
But be of comfort.

2 *Officer.* Come, sir, away.

Antonio. I must entreat of you some of that money.

Viola. What money, sir?
For the fair kindness you have show'd me here,
And, part, being prompted by your present trouble,

Out of my lean and low ability
I 'll lend you something. My having is not much;
I 'll make division of my present with you.
Hold, there 's half my coffer.
Antonio. Will you deny me now?
Is 't possible that my deserts to you
Can lack persuasion? Do not tempt my misery,
Lest that it make me so unsound a man
As to upbraid you with those kindnesses
That I have done for you.
Viola. I know of none,
Nor know I you by voice or any feature.
I hate ingratitude more in a man
Than lying, vainness, babbling drunkenness,
Or any taint of vice whose strong corruption
Inhabits our frail blood.
Antonio. O heavens themselves!
2 *Officer.* Come, sir, I pray you, go.
Antonio. Let me speak a little. This youth that you see here
I snatch'd one half out of the jaws of death,
Reliev'd him with such sanctity of love,
And to his image, which methought did promise
Most venerable worth, did I devotion.
1 *Officer.* What 's that to us? The time goes by; away!
Antonio. But, O, how vile an idol proves this god! —
Thou hast, Sebastian, done good feature shame. —
In nature there 's no blemish but the mind;

None can be call'd deform'd but the unkind.
Virtue is beauty, but the beauteous-evil
Are empty trunks o'erflourish'd by the devil.

1 *Officer.* The man grows mad; away with him! — Come, come, sir.

Antonio. Lead me on. [*Exit with Officers.*

Viola. Methinks his words do from such passion fly
That he believes himself; so do not I.
Prove true, imagination, O, prove true,
That I, dear brother, be now ta'en for you!

Sir Toby. Come hither, knight, — come hither, Fabian; — we 'll whisper o'er a couplet or two of most sage saws.

Viola. He nam'd Sebastian. I my brother know
Yet living in my glass; even such and so
In favour was my brother, and he went
Still in this fashion, colour, ornament,
For him I imitate. O, if it prove,
Tempests are kind, and salt waves fresh in love!
[*Exit.*

Sir Toby. A very dishonest, paltry boy, and more a coward than a hare; his dishonesty appears in leaving his friend here in necessity and denying him, and for his cowardship, ask Fabian.

Fabian. A coward, a most devout coward, religious in it.

Sir Andrew. 'Slid, I 'll after him again and beat him.

Sir Toby. Do; cuff him soundly, but never draw thy sword.

Sir Andrew. An I do not, — [*Exit.*

Fabian. Come, let 's see the event.

Sir Toby. I dare lay any money 't will be nothing yet. [*Exeunt.*

ACT IV.

Scene I. *Before Olivia's House*

Enter Sebastian *and* Clown

Clown. Will you make me believe I am not sent for you?

Sebastian. Go to, go to, thou art a foolish fellow; Let me be clear of thee.

Clown. Well held out, i' faith! No, I do not know you; nor I am not sent to you by my lady, to bid you come speak with her; nor your name is not Master Cesario; nor this is not my nose neither. Nothing that is so is so.

Sebastian. I prithee, vent thy folly somewhere else; Thou know'st not me.

Clown. Vent my folly! he has heard that word of some great man, and now applies it to a fool. Vent my folly! I am afraid this great lubber, the world, will prove a cockney. — I prithee now, ungird thy strangeness, and tell me what I shall vent to my lady; shall I vent to her that thou art coming?

Sebastian. I prithee, foolish Greek, depart from me.
There 's money for thee; if you tarry longer,
I shall give worse payment.

Clown. By my troth, thou hast an open hand. — These wise men that give fools money get themselves a good report — after fourteen years' purchase.

Enter Sir Andrew, Sir Toby, *and* Fabian

Sir Andrew. Now, sir, have I met you again? there 's for you.

Sebastian. Why, there 's for thee, and there, and there, and there.
Are all the people mad?

Sir Toby. Hold, sir, or I 'll throw your dagger o'er the house.

Clown. This will I tell my lady straight; I would not be in some of your coats for two pence. [*Exit.*

Sir Toby. Come on, sir; hold.

Sir Andrew. Nay, let him alone. I 'll go another way to work with him; I 'll have an action of battery against him, if there be any law in Illyria. Though I struck him first, yet it 's no matter for that.

Sebastian. Let go thy hand.

Sir Toby. Come, sir, I will not let you go. Come, my young soldier, put up your iron. You are well fleshed; come on.

Sebastian. I will be free from thee. What wouldst thou now?
If thou dar'st tempt me further, draw thy sword.

Sir Toby. What, what? Nay, then I must have an ounce or two of this malapert blood from you.

Enter Olivia

Olivia. Hold, Toby; on thy life I charge thee, hold!

Sir Toby. Madam!

Olivia. Will it be ever thus? Ungracious wretch,
Fit for the mountains and the barbarous caves
Where manners ne'er were preach'd! out of my sight! —
Be not offended, dear Cesario. —
Rudesby, be gone! —

[*Exeunt Sir Toby, Sir Andrew, and Fabian.*

I prithee, gentle friend,
Let thy fair wisdom, not thy passion, sway
In this uncivil and unjust extent
Against thy peace. Go with me to my house,
And hear thou there how many fruitless pranks
This ruffian hath botch'd up, that thou thereby
Mayst smile at this. Thou shalt not choose but go;
Do not deny. Beshrew his soul for me,
He started one poor heart of mine in thee.

Sebastian. What relish is in this? how runs the stream?
Or I am mad, or else this is a dream.
Let fancy still my sense in Lethe steep;
If it be thus to dream, still let me sleep!

Olivia. Nay, come, I prithee; would thou 'dst be rul'd by me!

Sebastian. Madam, I will.

Olivia. O, say so, and so be! [*Exeunt.*

Scene II. *Olivia's House*

Enter Maria *and* Clown

Maria. Nay, I prithee, put on this gown and this beard, make him believe thou art Sir Topas the curate. Do it quickly; I 'll call Sir Toby the whilst. [*Exit.*

Clown. Well, I 'll put it on, and I will dissemble myself in 't; and I would I were the first that ever dissembled in such a gown. I am not tall enough to become the function well, nor lean enough to be thought a good student; but to be said an honest man and a good housekeeper goes as fairly as to say a careful man and a great scholar. The competitors enter.

Enter Sir Toby *and* Maria

Sir Toby. Jove bless thee, master Parson.

Clown. Bonos dies, Sir Toby; for, as the old hermit of Prague that never saw pen and ink very wittily said to a niece of King Gorboduc, 'That that is is,'

so I, being master Parson, am master Parson; for, what is that but that, and is but is?

Sir Toby. To him, Sir Topas.

Clown. What, ho, I say! peace in this prison!

Sir Toby. The knave counterfeits well; a good knave!

Malvolio. [*Within*] Who calls there?

Clown. Sir Topas the curate, who comes to visit Malvolio the lunatic.

Malvolio. Sir Topas, Sir Topas, good Sir Topas, go to my lady.

Clown. Out, hyperbolical fiend! how vexest thou this man! talkest thou nothing but of ladies?

Sir Toby. Well said, master Parson.

Malvolio. Sir Topas, never was man thus wronged. Good Sir Topas, do not think I am mad; they have laid me here in hideous darkness.

Clown. Fie, thou dishonest Satan! I call thee by the most modest terms, for I am one of those gentle ones that will use the devil himself with courtesy; sayest thou that house is dark?

Malvolio. As hell, Sir Topas.

Clown. Why, it hath bay-windows transparent as barricadoes, and the clear-stores towards the south-north are as lustrous as ebony; and yet complainest thou of obstruction?

Malvolio. I am not mad, Sir Topas; I say to you, this house is dark.

Clown. Madman, thou errest; I say, there is no

darkness but ignorance, in which thou art more puzzled than the Egyptians in their fog.

Malvolio. I say this house is as dark as ignorance, though ignorance were as dark as hell; and I say there was never man thus abused. I am no more mad than you are; make the trial of it in any constant question.

Clown. What is the opinion of Pythagoras concerning wild fowl?

Malvolio. That the soul of our grandam might happily inhabit a bird.

Clown. What thinkest thou of his opinion?

Malvolio. I think nobly of the soul, and no way approve his opinion.

Clown. Fare thee well. Remain thou still in darkness; thou shalt hold the opinion of Pythagoras ere I will allow of thy wits, and fear to kill a woodcock lest thou dispossess the soul of thy grandam. Fare thee well.

Malvolio. Sir Topas, Sir Topas!

Sir Toby. My most exquisite Sir Topas!

Clown. Nay, I am for all waters.

Maria. Thou mightst have done this without thy beard and gown; he sees thee not.

Sir Toby. To him in thine own voice, and bring me word how thou findest him; I would we were well rid of this knavery. If he may be conveniently delivered, I would he were, for I am now so far in offence with my niece that I cannot pursue with any

safety this sport to the upshot. Come by and by to my chamber. [*Exeunt Sir Toby and Maria.*

Clown. [Singing] '*Hey, Robin, jolly Robin,*
Tell me how thy lady does.'

Malvolio. Fool!

Clown. '*My lady is unkind, perdy.*'

Malvolio. Fool!

Clown. '*Alas, why is she so?*'

Malvolio. Fool, I say.

Clown. '*She loves another*' — Who calls, ha?

Malvolio. Good fool, as ever thou wilt deserve well at my hand, help me to a candle, and pen, ink, and paper; as I am a gentleman, I will live to be thankful to thee for 't.

Clown. Master Malvolio?

Malvolio. Ay, good fool.

Clown. Alas, sir, how fell you besides your five wits?

Malvolio. Fool, there was never man so notoriously abused; I am as well in my wits, fool, as thou art.

Clown. But as well? then you are mad indeed, if you be no better in your wits than a fool.

Malvolio. They have here propertied me; keep me in darkness, send ministers to me, asses, and do all they can to face me out of my wits.

Clown. Advise you what you say; the minister is here. — Malvolio, Malvolio, thy wits the heavens restore! endeavour thyself to sleep, and leave thy vain bibble babble.

Malvolio. Sir Topas!

Clown. Maintain no words with him, good fellow. — Who, I, sir? not I, sir. God be wi' you, good Sir Topas. — Marry, amen. — I will, sir, I will.

Malvolio. Fool, fool, fool, I say!

Clown. Alas, sir, be patient. What say you, sir? I am shent for speaking to you.

Malvolio. Good fool, help me to some light and some paper; I tell thee, I am as well in my wits as any man in Illyria.

Clown. Well-a-day that you were, sir!

Malvolio. By this hand, I am. Good fool, some ink, paper, and light; and convey what I will set down to my lady. It shall advantage thee more than ever the bearing of letter did.

Clown. I will help you to 't. But tell me true, are you not mad indeed? or do you but counterfeit?

Malvolio. Believe me I am not; I tell thee true.

Clown. Nay, I 'll ne'er believe a madman till I see his brains. I will fetch you light and paper and ink.

Malvolio. Fool, I 'll requite it in the highest degree; I prithee, be gone.

Clown. [Singing]

I am gone, sir,
And anon, sir,
I'll be with you again
In a trice,
Like to the old Vice,
Your need to sustain;

Who, with dagger of lath,
In his rage and his wrath,
Cries, ah, ha! to the devil:
Like a mad lad,
Pare thy nails, dad;
Adieu, goodman devil. [*Exit.*

Scene III. *Olivia's Garden*

Enter Sebastian

Sebastian. This is the air; that is the glorious sun;
This pearl she gave me, I do feel 't and see 't;
And though 't is wonder that enwraps me thus,
Yet 't is not madness. Where 's Antonio, then?
I could not find him at the Elephant;
Yet there he was, and there I found this credit,
That he did range the town to seek me out.
His counsel now might do me golden service,
For though my soul disputes well with my sense
That this may be some error, but no madness,
Yet doth this accident and flood of fortune
So far exceed all instance, all discourse,
That I am ready to distrust mine eyes
And wrangle with my reason that persuades me
To any other trust but that I am mad
Or else the lady 's mad; yet, if 't were so,
She could not sway her house, command her followers,

Take and give back affairs and their dispatch
With such a smooth, discreet, and stable bearing
As I perceive she does. There 's something in 't
That is deceivable. — But here the lady comes.

Enter Olivia *and* Priest

Olivia. Blame not this haste of mine. If you mean well,
Now go with me and with this holy man
Into the chantry by ; there, before him,
And underneath that consecrated roof,
Plight me the full assurance of your faith,
That my most jealous and too doubtful soul
May live at peace. He shall conceal it
Whiles you are willing it shall come to note,
What time we will our celebration keep
According to my birth. — What do you say ?

Sebastian. I 'll follow this good man and go with you,
And, having sworn truth, ever will be true.

Olivia. Then lead the way, good father ; and heavens so shine,
That they may fairly note this act of mine ! [*Exeunt.*

"Enter Priest"

ACT V

Scene I. *Before Olivia's House*

Enter Clown *and* Fabian

Fabian. Now, as thou lovest me, let me see his letter.

Clown. Good Master Fabian, grant me another request.

Fabian. Any thing.

Clown. Do not desire to see this letter.

Fabian. This is, to give a dog, and in recompense desire my dog again.

Enter Duke, Viola, Curio, *and* Lords

Duke. Belong you to the Lady Olivia, friends?

Clown. Ay, sir; we are some of her trappings.

Duke. I know thee well; how dost thou, my good fellow?

Clown. Truly, sir, the better for my foes and the worse for my friends.

Duke. Just the contrary; the better for thy friends.

Clown. No, sir, the worse.

Duke. How can that be?

Clown. Marry, sir, they praise me and make an ass of me; now my foes tell me plainly I am an ass. So that by my foes, sir, I profit in the knowledge of myself, and by my friends I am abused; so that, conclusions to be as kisses, if your four negatives make your two affirmatives, why then, the worse for my friends and the better for my foes.

Duke. Why, this is excellent.

Clown. By my troth, sir, no; though it please you to be one of my friends.

Duke. Thou shalt not be the worse for me; there's gold.

Clown. But that it would be double-dealing, sir, I would you could make it another.

Duke. O, you give me ill counsel.

Clown. Put your grace in your pocket, sir, for this once, and let your flesh and blood obey it.

Duke. Well, I will be so much a sinner to be a double-dealer; there 's another.

Clown. Primo, secundo, tertio, is a good play, and the old saying is, the third pays for all. The triplex, sir, is a good tripping measure; or the bells of Saint Bennet, sir, may put you in mind, — one, two, three.

Duke. You can fool no more money out of me at this throw; if you will let your lady know I am here to speak with her, and bring her along with you, it may awake my bounty further.

Clown. Marry, sir, lullaby to your bounty till I come again. I go, sir, but I would not have you to think that my desire of having is the sin of covetousness; but, as you say, sir, let your bounty take a nap, I will awake it anon. [*Exit.*

Viola. Here comes the man, sir, that did rescue me.

Enter Antonio *and* Officers

Duke. That face of his I do remember well;
Yet, when I saw it last, it was besmear'd
As black as Vulcan in the smoke of war.
A bawbling vessel was he captain of,
For shallow draught and bulk unprizable,
With which such scathful grapple did he make
With the most noble bottom of our fleet
That very envy and the tongue of loss
Cried fame and honour on him. — What's the matter?

1 *Officer.* Orsino, this is that Antonio
That took the Phœnix and her fraught from Candy;

And this is he that did the Tiger board,
When your young nephew Titus lost his leg.
Here in the streets, desperate of shame and state,
In private brabble did we apprehend him.

Viola. He did me kindness, sir, drew on my side,
But in conclusion put strange speech upon me.
I know not what 't was but distraction.

Duke. Notable pirate! thou salt-water thief!
What foolish boldness brought thee to their mercies
Whom thou, in terms so bloody and so dear,
Hast made thine enemies?

Antonio. Orsino, noble sir,
Be pleas'd that I shake off these names you give me;
Antonio never yet was thief or pirate,
Though I confess, on base and ground enough,
Orsino's enemy. A witchcraft drew me hither.
That most ingrateful boy there by your side,
From the rude sea's enrag'd and foamy mouth
Did I redeem; a wrack past hope he was.
His life I gave him, and did thereto add
My love, without retention or restraint,
All his in dedication; for his sake
Did I expose myself, pure for his love,
Into the danger of this adverse town,
Drew to defend him when he was beset,
Where being apprehended, his false cunning,
Not meaning to partake with me in danger,
Taught him to face me out of his acquaintance,
And grew a twenty-years-removed thing

While one would wink, denied me mine own purse
Which I had recommended to his use
Not half an hour before.

Viola. How can this be?

Duke. When came he to this town?

Antonio. To-day, my lord; and for three months before,
No interim, not a minute's vacancy,
Both day and night did we keep company.

Enter Olivia *and* Attendants

Duke. Here comes the countess; now heaven walks on earth. —
But for thee, fellow, — fellow, thy words are madness.
Three months this youth hath tended upon me;
But more of that anon. — Take him aside.

Olivia. What would my lord, but that he may not have,
Wherein Olivia may seem serviceable? —
Cesario, you do not keep promise with me.

Viola. Madam!

Duke. Gracious Olivia, —

Olivia. What do you say, Cesario? — Good my lord, —

Viola. My lord would speak, my duty hushes me.

Olivia. If it be aught to the old tune, my lord,
It is as fat and fulsome to mine ear
As howling after music.

Duke. Still so cruel?

Olivia. Still so constant, lord.

Duke. What, to perverseness? you uncivil lady,
To whose ingrate and unauspicious altars
My soul the faithfull'st offerings hath breath'd out
That e'er devotion tender'd! What shall I do?

Olivia. Even what it please my lord, that shall become him.

Duke. Why should I not, had I the heart to do it,
Like to the Egyptian thief at point of death,
Kill what I love? — a savage jealousy
That sometime savours nobly. But hear me this:
Since you to non-regardance cast my faith,
And that I partly know the instrument
That screws me from my true place in your favour,
Live you the marble-breasted tyrant still;
But this your minion, whom I know you love,
And whom, by heaven I swear, I tender dearly,
Him will I tear out of that cruel eye
Where he sits crowned in his master's spite. —
Come, boy, with me; my thoughts are ripe in mischief.
I 'll sacrifice the lamb that I do love,
To spite a raven's heart within a dove.

Viola. And I, most jocund, apt, and willingly,
To do you rest, a thousand deaths would die.

Olivia. Where goes Cesario?

Viola. After him I love
More than I love these eyes, more than my life,
More, by all mores, than e'er I shall love wife. —

If I do feign, you witnesses above
Punish my life for tainting of my love!

Olivia. Ay me, detested! how am I beguil'd!

Viola. Who does beguile you? who does do you wrong?

Olivia. Hast thou forgot thyself! is it so long? —
Call forth the holy father.

Duke. Come, away!

Olivia. Whither, my lord? — Cesario, husband, stay.

Duke. Husband!

Olivia. Ay, husband; can he that deny?

Duke. Her husband, sirrah!

Viola. No, my lord, not I.

Olivia. Alas, it is the baseness of thy fear
That makes thee strangle thy propriety!
Fear not, Cesario, take thy fortunes up;
Be that thou know'st thou art, and then thou art
As great as that thou fear'st. —

Enter Priest

O, welcome, father!
Father, I charge thee, by thy reverence,
Here to unfold, though lately we intended
To keep in darkness what occasion now
Reveals before 't is ripe, what thou dost know
Hath newly pass'd between this youth and me.

Priest. A contract of eternal bond of love,
Confirm'd by mutual joinder of your hands,
Attested by the holy close of lips,

Strengthen'd by interchangement of your rings,
And all the ceremony of this compact
Seal'd in my function, by my testimony;
Since when, my watch hath told me, toward my grave
I have travell'd but two hours.

Duke. O thou dissembling cub! what wilt thou be
When time hath sow'd a grizzle on thy case?
Or will not else thy craft so quickly grow,
That thine own trip shall be thine overthrow?
Farewell, and take her; but direct thy feet
Where thou and I henceforth may never meet.

Viola. My lord, I do protest—

Olivia. O, do not swear!
Hold little faith, though thou hast too much fear.

Enter Sir Andrew

Sir Andrew. For the love of God, a surgeon! Send one presently to Sir Toby.

Olivia. What 's the matter?

Sir Andrew. He has broke my head across and has given Sir Toby a bloody coxcomb too; for the love of God, your help! I had rather than forty pound I were at home.

Olivia. Who has done this, Sir Andrew?

Sir Andrew. The count's gentleman, one Cesario; we took him for a coward, but he 's the very devil incardinate.

Duke. My gentleman, Cesario?

Sir Andrew. 'Od's lifelings, here he is! — You broke my head for nothing; and that that I did, I was set on to do 't by Sir Toby.

Viola. Why do you speak to me? I never hurt you;
You drew your sword upon me without cause,
But I bespake you fair and hurt you not.

Sir Andrew. If a bloody coxcomb be a hurt, you have hurt me; I think you set nothing by a bloody coxcomb. —

Enter Sir Toby *and* Clown

Here comes Sir Toby halting; you shall hear more; but if he had not been in drink, he would have tickled you othergates than he did.

Duke. How now, gentleman! how is 't with you?

Sir Toby. That 's all one; he has hurt me, and there 's the end on 't. — Sot, didst see Dick surgeon, sot?

Clown. O, he 's drunk, Sir Toby, an hour agone; his eyes were set at eight i' the morning.

Sir Toby. Then he 's a rogue, and a passy-measures pavin. I hate a drunken rogue.

Olivia. Away with him! — Who hath made this havoc with them?

Sir Andrew. I 'll help you, Sir Toby, because we 'll be dressed together.

Sir Toby. Will you help? an ass-head and a coxcomb and a knave, a thin-faced knave, a gull!

Olivia. Get him to bed, and let his hurt be look'd to.

[*Exeunt Clown, Fabian, Sir Toby, and Sir Andrew.*

Enter SEBASTIAN

Sebastian. I am sorry, madam, I have hurt your kinsman,
But, had it been the brother of my blood,
I must have done no less with wit and safety.
You throw a strange regard upon me, and by that
I do perceive it hath offended you.
Pardon me, sweet one, even for the vows
We made each other but so late ago.

Duke. One face, one voice, one habit, and two persons,
A natural perspective, that is and is not!

Sebastian. Antonio, O my dear Antonio!
How have the hours rack'd and tortur'd me
Since I have lost thee!

Antonio. Sebastian are you?

Sebastian. Fear'st thou that, Antonio?

Antonio. How have you made division of yourself? —
An apple, cleft in two, is not more twin
Than these two creatures. Which is Sebastian?

Olivia. Most wonderful!

Sebastian. Do I stand there? I never had a brother;
Nor can there be that deity in my nature,

Of here and every where. I had a sister,
Whom the blind waves and surges have devour'd. —
Of charity, what kin are you to me?
What countryman? what name? what parentage?
Viola. Of Messaline. Sebastian was my father;
Such a Sebastian was my brother too,
So went he suited to his watery tomb.
If spirits can assume both form and suit,
You come to fright us.
Sebastian. A spirit I am indeed;
But am in that dimension grossly clad
Which from the womb I did participate.
Were you a woman, as the rest goes even,
I should my tears let fall upon your cheek,
And say, Thrice-welcome, drowned Viola!
Viola. My father had a mole upon his brow.
Sebastian. And so had mine.
Viola. And died that day when Viola from her birth
Had number'd thirteen years.
Sebastian. O, that record is lively in my soul!
He finished indeed his mortal act
That day that made my sister thirteen years.
Viola. If nothing lets to make us happy both
But this my masculine usurp'd attire,
Do not embrace me till each circumstance
Of place, time, fortune, do cohere and jump
That I am Viola; which to confirm,
I 'll bring you to a captain in this town,

Where lie my maiden weeds, by whose gentle help
I was preserv'd to serve this noble count.
All the occurrence of my fortune since
Hath been between this lady and this lord.
Sebastian [*To Olivia*] So comes it, lady, you have been mistook;
But nature to her bias drew in that.
You would have been contracted to a maid;
Nor are you therein, by my life, deceiv'd,
You are betroth'd both to a maid and man.
Duke. Be not amaz'd; right noble is his blood. —
If this be so, as yet the glass seems true,
I shall have share in this most happy wrack. —
[*To Viola*] Boy, thou hast said to me a thousand times
Thou never shouldst love woman like to me.
Viola. And all those sayings will I over-swear,
And all those swearings keep as true in soul
As doth that orbed continent the fire
That severs day from night.
Duke. Give me thy hand,
And let me see thee in thy woman's weeds.
Viola. The captain that did bring me first on shore
Hath my maid's garments; he upon some action
Is now in durance, at Malvolio's suit,
A gentleman, and follower of my lady's.
Olivia. He shall enlarge him. — Fetch Malvolio hither; —

And yet, alas, now I remember me,
They say, poor gentleman, he 's much distract.

Re-enter Clown *with a letter, and* FABIAN

A most extracting frenzy of mine own
From my remembrance clearly banish'd his. —
How does he, sirrah?

Clown. Truly, madam, he holds Belzebub at the stave's end as well as a man in his case may do. He has here writ a letter to you; I should have given 't you to-day morning, but as a madman's epistles are no gospels, so it skills not much when they are delivered.

Olivia. Open 't, and read it.

Clown. Look then to be well edified when the fool delivers the madman. [Reads] '*By the Lord, madam,*' —

Olivia. How now! art thou mad?

Clown. No, madam, I do but read madness: an your ladyship will have it as it ought to be, you must allow vox.

Olivia. Prithee, read i' thy right wits.

Clown. So I do, madonna, but to read his right wits is to read thus; therefore perpend, my princess, and give ear.

Olivia. [*To Fabian*] Read it you, sirrah.

Fabian. [Reads] '*By the Lord, madam, you wrong me, and the world shall know it; though you have put me into darkness and given your drunken cousin rule*

over me, yet have I the benefit of my senses as well as your ladyship. I have your own letter that induced me to the semblance I put on, with the which I doubt not but to do myself much right or you much shame. Think of me as you please. I leave my duty a little unthought of, and speak out of my injury.

THE MADLY-USED MALVOLIO.'

Olivia. Did he write this?

Clown. Ay, madam.

Duke. This savours not much of distraction.

Olivia. See him deliver'd, Fabian; bring him hither. — [*Exit Fabian.*

My lord, so please you, these things further thought on,
To think me as well a sister as a wife,
One day shall crown the alliance on 't, so please you,
Here at my house and at my proper cost.

Duke. Madam, I am most apt to embrace your offer.—

[*To Viola*] Your master quits you, and for your service done him,
So much against the mettle of your sex,
So far beneath your soft and tender breeding,
And since you call'd me master for so long,
Here is my hand; you shall from this time be
Your master's mistress.

Olivia. A sister! you are she.

Re-enter FABIAN, *with* MALVOLIO

Duke. Is this the madman?

Olivia. Ay, my lord, this same. — How now, Malvolio!

Malvolio. Madam, you have done me wrong, Notorious wrong.

Olivia. Have I, Malvolio? no.

Malvolio. Lady, you have. Pray you, peruse that letter.
You must not now deny it is your hand.
Write from it, if you can, in hand or phrase,
Or say 't is not your seal, not your invention.
You can say none of this. Well, grant it then,
And tell me, in the modesty of honour,
Why you have given me such clear lights of favour,
Bade me come smiling and cross-garter'd to you,
To put on yellow stockings and to frown
Upon Sir Toby and the lighter people;
And, acting this in an obedient hope,
Why have you suffer'd me to be imprison'd,
Kept in a dark house, visited by the priest,
And made the most notorious geck and gull
That e'er invention play'd on? tell me why.

Olivia. Alas, Malvolio, this is not my writing,
Though, I confess, much like the character,
But out of question 't is Maria's hand.
And now I do bethink me, it was she
First told me thou wast mad; then cam'st in smiling,

And in such forms which here were presuppos'd
Upon thee in the letter. Prithee, be content;
This practice hath most shrewdly pass'd upon thee,
But when we know the grounds and authors of it,
Thou shalt be both the plaintiff and the judge
Of thine own cause.

Fabian. Good madam, hear me speak,
And let no quarrel nor no brawl to come
Taint the condition of this present hour,
Which I have wonder'd at. In hope it shall not,
Most freely I confess, myself and Toby
Set this device against Malvolio here,
Upon some stubborn and uncourteous parts
We had conceiv'd against him. Maria writ
The letter at Sir Toby's great importance,
In recompense whereof he hath married her.
How with a sportful malice it was follow'd
May rather pluck on laughter than revenge,
If that the injuries be justly weigh'd
That have on both sides pass'd.

Olivia. Alas, poor fool, how have they baffled thee!

Clown. Why, 'some are born great, some achieve greatness, and some have greatness thrown upon them.' I was one, sir, in this interlude, one Sir Topas, sir; but that 's all one. — 'By the Lord, fool, I am not mad.' — But do you remember? 'Madam, why laugh you at such a barren rascal? an you smile not, he 's gagged.' And thus the whirligig of time brings in his revenges.

Malvolio. I 'll be reveng'd on the whole pack of you.
[*Exit.*

Olivia. He hath been most notoriously abus'd.

Duke. Pursue him and entreat him to a peace.
He hath not told us of the captain yet.
When that is known and golden time convents,
A solemn combination shall be made
Of our dear souls. — Meantime, sweet sister,
We will not part from hence. — Cesario, come;
For so you shall be while you are a man,
But when in other habits you are seen,
Orsino's mistress and his fancy's queen.
[*Exeunt all, except Clown.*

Clown. [Sings]

When that I was and a little tiny boy,
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,
A foolish thing was but a toy,
For the rain it raineth every day.

But when I came to man's estate,
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,
'Gainst knaves and thieves men shut their gate,
For the rain it raineth every day.

But when I came, alas! to wive,
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,
By swaggering could I never thrive,
For the rain it raineth every day.

But when I came unto my beds,
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,
With toss-pots still had drunken heads,
For the rain it raineth every day.

A great while ago the world begun,
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,
But that 's all one, our play is done,
And we 'll strive to please you every day.

[*Exit.*

NOTES

"Spinsters and Knitters"

NOTES

Introduction

The Metre of the Play. — It should be understood at the outset that *metre*, or the mechanism of verse, is something altogether distinct from the *music* of verse. The one is matter of rule, the other of taste and feeling. Music is not an absolute necessity of verse; the metrical form is a necessity, being that which constitutes the verse.

The plays of Shakespeare (with the exception of rhymed passages, and of occasional songs and interludes) are all in unrhymed or *blank* verse; and the normal form of this blank verse is illus-

trated by the first line of the present play: "If music be the food of love, play on."

This line, it will be seen, consists of ten syllables, with the even syllables (2d, 4th, 6th, 8th, and 10th) accented, the odd syllables (1st, 3d, etc.) being unaccented. Theoretically, it is made up of five *feet* of two syllables each, with the accent on the second syllable. Such a foot is called an *iambus* (plural, *iambuses*, or the Latin *iambi*), and the form of verse is called *iambic*.

This fundamental law of Shakespeare's verse is subject to certain modifications, the most important of which are as follows: —

1. After the tenth syllable an unaccented syllable (or even two such syllables) may be added, forming what is sometimes called a *female* line; as in the twenty-fourth line of the first scene: "So please my lord, I might not be admitted." The rhythm is complete with the second syllable of *admitted*, the third being an extra eleventh syllable. In i. 2. 34 ("That he did seek the love of fair Olivia") we have two extra syllables, the rhythm being complete with the second syllable of *Olivia*.

2. The accent in any part of the verse may be shifted from an even to an odd syllable; as in lines 5 and 7 of the first scene: —

"O, it came o'er my ear like the sweet sound
* * * * * * *
Stealing and giving odour! Enough; no more!"

In both lines the accent is shifted from the second to the first syllable. This change occurs very rarely in the tenth syllable, and seldom in the fourth; and it is not allowable in two successive accented syllables.

3. An extra unaccented syllable may occur in any part of the line: as in lines 7, 9, and 14. In 7 the second syllable of *odour* is superfluous; in 9 the second syllable of *spirit;* and in 14 the second syllable of *even* and *minute*.

4. Any unaccented syllable, occurring in an even place immediately before or after an even syllable which is properly accented, is

reckoned as accented for the purposes of the verse; as, for instance, in lines 2 and 3. In 2 the last syllable of *surfeiting*, and in 3 the last of *appetite* are metrically equivalent to accented syllables; and so with the last syllable of *violets* in 6. Other examples are the third syllable of *notwithstanding* and the last of *capacity* in 10, the last of *validity* in 12, and the last of *fantastical* in 15.

5. In many instances in Shakespeare words must be *lengthened* in order to fill out the rhythm: —

(*a*) In a large class of words in which *e* or *i* is followed by another vowel, the *e* or *i* is made a separate syllable; as *ocean*, *opinion*, *soldier*, *patience*, *partial*, *marriage*, etc. For instance, line 39 of the first scene of the present play appears to have only nine syllables, but *perfection* is a quadrisyllable, as *perfections* is in i. 5. 306. In i. 5. 265 *adorations* has metrically five syllables. This lengthening occurs most frequently at the end of the line.

(*b*) Many monosyllables ending in *r*, *re*, *rs*, *res*, preceded by a long vowel or diphthong, are often made dissyllables; as *fare*, *fear*, *dear*, *fire*, *hair*, *hour*, *your*, etc. In iii. 1. 113 ("Than music from the spheres. Dear lady,") both *spheres* and *Dear* are dissyllables. If the word is repeated in a verse, it is often both monosyllable and dissyllable; as in *M. of V.* iii. 2. 20: "And so, though yours, not yours. Prove it so," where either *yours* (preferably the first) is a dissyllable, the other being a monosyllable. In *J. C.* iii. 1. 172: "As fire drives out fire, so pity, pity," the first *fire* is a dissyllable.

(*c*) Words containing *l* or *r*, preceded by another consonant, are often pronounced as if a vowel came between the consonants; as in i. 1. 32: "And lasting in her sad remembrance," where *remembrance* is a quadrisyllable (rememb(e)rance); as in *W. T.* iv. 4. 76: "Grace and remembrance [rememb(e)rance] be to you both!" In i. 2. 11: "The like of him. Know'st thou this country?" *country* is a trisyllable (count(e)ry). See also *T. of S.* ii. 1. 158: "While she did call me rascal fiddler" [fidd(e)ler]; *All's Well*, iii.

5. 43: "If you will tarry, holy pilgrim" [pilg(e)rim]; *C. of E.* v. 1. 360: "These are the parents of these children" (childeren, the original form of the word).

(*d*) Monosyllabic exclamations (*ay*, *O*, *yea*, *nay*, *hail*, etc.) and monosyllables otherwise emphasized are similarly lengthened; also certain longer words; as *commandement* in *M. of V.* iv. 1. 442; *safety* (trisyllable) in *Ham.* i. 3. 21; *business* (trisyllable, as originally pronounced) in *J. C.* iv. 1. 22: "To groan and sweat under the business" (so in several other passages); and other words mentioned in the notes to the plays in which they occur.

6. Words are also *contracted* for metrical reasons, like plurals and possessives ending in a sibilant, as *balance*, *horse* (for *horses* and *horse's*), *princess*, *sense*, *marriage* (plural and possessive), *image*, and other words mentioned in the notes on this and other plays.

7. The *accent* of words is also varied in many instances for metrical reasons. Thus we find both *révenue* and *revénue* in the first scene of the *M. N. D.* (lines 6 and 158), *áccess* and *accéss* (see note on i. 5. 16), *óbscure* and *obscúre*, *púrsue* and *pursúe*, *cóntrary* and *contráry*, etc.

These instances of variable accent must not be confounded with those in which words were uniformly accented differently in the time of Shakespeare; like *aspéct* (see on i. 4. 27), *impórtune*, *perséver* (never *persevére*), *perséverance*, *rheúmatic*, etc.

8. *Alexandrines*, or verses of twelve syllables, with six accents, occur here and there; as in the inscriptions on the caskets in the *M. of V.* See also iv. 3. 21 in the present play: "That is deceivable. But here the lady comes"; v. 1. 73: "Hast made thine enemies? Orsino, noble sir," etc. They must not be confounded with female lines with two extra syllables (see on 1 above) or with other lines in which two extra unaccented syllables may occur.

9. *Incomplete* verses, of one or more syllables, are scattered through the plays. See, for instance, in this play i. 1. 17, i. 2. 1, 2, 17, 18, 24, 26, 27, 29, 35, etc.

10. *Doggerel* measure is used in the earliest comedies (*L. L. L.* and *C. of E.* in particular) in the mouths of comic characters, but nowhere else in those plays, and never anywhere after 1598 or 1599.

11. *Rhyme* occurs frequently in the early plays, but diminishes with comparative regularity from that period until the latest. Thus, in *L. L. L.* there are about 1100 rhyming verses (about one-third of the whole number), in the *M. N. D.* about 900, in *Richard II.* and *R. and J.* about 500 each, while in *Cor.* and *A. and C.* there are only about 40 each, in the *Temp.* only two, and in the *W. T.* none at all, except in the chorus introducing act iv. Songs, interludes, and other matter not in ten-syllable measure are not included in this enumeration. In the present play, out of some 850 ten-syllable verses, about 120 are in rhyme.

Alternate rhymes are found only in the plays written before 1599 or 1600. In the *M. of V.* there are only four lines at the end of iii. 2. In *Much Ado* and *A. Y. L.* we also find a few lines, but none at all in subsequent plays.

Rhymed couplets, or "rhyme-tags" are often found at the end of scenes; as in the first scene, and eleven other scenes, of the present play. In *Ham.* 14 out of 20 scenes, and in *Macb.* 21 out of 28, have such "tags"; but in the latest plays they are not so frequent. The *Temp.*, for instance, has but one, and the *W. T.* none.

12. In this edition of Shakespeare, the final *-ed* of past tenses and participles is printed *-'d* when the word is to be pronounced in the ordinary way; as in *purg'd*, line 20, and *turn'd*, line 21, of the first scene. But when the metre requires that the *-ed* be made a separate syllable, the *e* is retained; as in *veiled*, line 28 of the first scene, where the word is a dissyllable. The only variation from this rule is in verbs like *cry*, *die*, *sue*, etc., the *-ed* of which is very rarely, if ever, made a separate syllable.

Shakespeare's Use of Verse and Prose in the Plays.— This is a subject to which the critics have given very little attention, but it is an interesting study. In the present play we find

scenes entirely in verse or in prose, and others in which the two are mixed. In general, we may say that verse is used for what is distinctly poetical, and prose for what is not poetical. The distinction, however, is not so clearly marked in the earlier as in the later plays. The second scene of the *M. of V.*, for instance, is in prose, because Portia and Nerissa are talking about the suitors in a familiar and playful way; but in the *T. G. of V.*, where Julia and Lucetta are discussing the suitors of the former in much the same fashion, the scene is in verse. Dowden, commenting on *Rich. II.*, remarks: "Had Shakespeare written the play a few years later, we may be certain that the gardener and his servants (iii. 4) would not have uttered stately speeches in verse, but would have spoken homely prose, and that humour would have mingled with the pathos of the scene. The same remark may be made with reference to the subsequent scene (v. 5) in which his groom visits the dethroned king in the Tower." Comic characters and those in low life generally speak in prose in the later plays, as Dowden intimates, but in the very earliest ones doggerel verse is much used instead. See on 10 above.

The change from prose to verse is well illustrated in the third scene of the *M. of V.* It begins with plain prosaic talk about a business matter; but when Antonio enters, it rises at once to the higher level of poetry. The sight of Antonio reminds Shylock of his hatred of the Merchant, and the passion expresses itself in verse, the vernacular tongue of poetry. We have a similar change in the first scene of *J. C.*, where, after the quibbling "chaff" of the mechanics about their trades, the mention of Pompey reminds the Tribune of their plebeian fickleness, and his scorn and indignation flame out in most eloquent verse. Note also in the present play the changes from verse to prose at i. 5. 248, 260, ii. 2. 12, 17, iii. 1. 62, etc.

The reasons for the choice of prose or verse are not always so clear as in these instances. We are seldom puzzled to explain the prose, but not unfrequently we meet with verse where we might

expect prose. As Professor Corson remarks (*Introduction to Shakespeare*, 1889), "Shakespeare adopted verse as the general tenor of his language, and therefore expressed much in verse that is within the capabilities of prose; in other words, his verse constantly encroaches upon the domain of prose, but his prose can never be said to encroach upon the domain of verse." If in rare instances we think we find exceptions to this latter statement, and prose actually seems to usurp the place of verse, I believe that careful study of the passage will prove the supposed exception to be apparent rather than real.

Some Books for Teachers and Students. — A few out of the many books that might be commended to the teacher and the critical student are the following: Halliwell-Phillipps's *Outlines of the Life of Shakespeare* (7th ed. 1887); Sidney Lee's *Life of Shakespeare* (1898; for ordinary students, the abridged ed. of 1899 is preferable); Schmidt's *Shakespeare Lexicon* (3d ed. 1902); Littledale's ed. of Dyce's *Glossary* (1902); Bartlett's *Concordance to Shakespeare* (1895); Abbott's *Shakespearian Grammar* (1873); Furness's "New Variorum" ed. of *Twelfth Night* (1901; encyclopædic and exhaustive); Dowden's *Shakspere: His Mind and Art* (American ed. 1881); Hudson's *Life, Art, and Characters of Shakespeare* (revised ed. 1882); Mrs. Jameson's *Characteristics of Women* (several eds.; some with the title, *Shakespeare Heroines*); Ten Brink's *Five Lectures on Shakespeare* (1895); Boas's *Shakespeare and His Predecessors* (1895); Dyer's *Folk-lore of Shakespeare* (American ed. 1884); Gervinus's *Shakespeare Commentaries* (Bunnett's translation, 1875); Wordsworth's *Shakespeare's Knowledge of the Bible* (3d ed. 1880); Elson's *Shakespeare in Music* (1901).

Some of the above books will be useful to all readers who are interested in special subjects or in general criticism of Shakespeare. Among those which are better suited to the needs of ordinary readers and students, the following may be mentioned: Mabie's *William Shakespeare: Poet, Dramatist, and Man* (1900); Dow-

den's *Shakspere Primer* (1877; small but invaluable); Rolfe's *Shakespeare the Boy* (1896; treating of the home and school life, the games and sports, the manners, customs, and folk-lore of the poet's time); Guerber's *Myths of Greece and Rome* (for young students who may need information on mythological allusions not explained in the notes).

Black's *Judith Shakespeare* (1884; a novel, but a careful study of the scene and the time) is a book that I always commend to young people, and their elders will also enjoy it. The Lambs' *Tales from Shakespeare* is a classic for beginners in the study of the dramatist; and in Rolfe's ed. the plan of the authors is carried out in the Notes by copious illustrative quotations from the plays. Mrs. Cowden-Clarke's *Girlhood of Shakespeare's Heroines* (several eds.) will particularly interest girls; and both girls and boys will find Bennett's *Master Skylark* (1897) and Imogen Clark's *Will Shakespeare's Little Lad* (1897) equally entertaining and instructive.

H. Snowden Ward's *Shakespeare's Town and Times* (1896) and John Leyland's *Shakespeare Country* (enlarged ed., 1903) are copiously illustrated books (yet inexpensive) which may be particularly commended for school libraries.

Abbreviations in the Notes. — The abbreviations of the names of Shakespeare's plays will be readily understood; as *T. N.* for *Twelfth Night*, *Cor.* for *Coriolanus*, 3 *Hen. VI.* for *The Third Part of King Henry the Sixth*, etc. *P. P.* refers to *The Passionate Pilgrim*; *V. and A.* to *Venus and Adonis*; *L. C.* to *Lover's Complaint*; and *Sonn.* to the *Sonnets*.

Other abbreviations that hardly need explanation are *Cf.* (*confer*, compare), *Fol.* (following), *Id.* (*idem*, the same), and *Prol.* (prologue). The numbers of the lines in the references (except for the present play) are those of the "Globe" edition (the cheapest and best edition of *Shakespeare* in one compact volume), which is now generally accepted as the standard for line-numbers in works of reference (Schmidt's *Lexicon*, Abbott's *Grammar*, Dowden's *Primer*, the publications of the New Shakspere Society, etc.).

ACT I

In the folio the play is divided into acts and scenes, but there is no list of *dramatis personæ*.

SCENE I. — 1. *If music*, etc. Halliwell-Phillipps quotes *The Squire of Alsatia*, 1688: "Remember Shakespear; 'If musick be the food of love, play on' — There 's nothing nourishes that soft passion like it; it imps his wings, and makes him fly a higher pitch." For *imps* (adds new feathers to), cf. *Rich. II.* ii. 1. 292.

2. *Give me excess*, etc. Cf. *T. G. of V.* iii. 1. 220: "And now excess of it will make me surfeit;" and *Oth.* ii. 1. 50: "my hopes, not surfeited to death."

4. *Fall.* Cadence. Cf. Milton, *Comus*, 251: —

> "At every fall smoothing the raven down
> Of darkness till it smil'd."

Holt White quotes Pope, *Ode on St. Cecilia's Day*: —

> "The strains decay,
> And melt away
> In a dying, dying fall."

and Thomson, *Spring*, 722: —

> "still at every dying fall
> Takes up the lamentable strain."

5. *Sound.* The folio reading, for which Pope substituted "south," which some editors adopt. Knight thus defends the old reading: "Let us consider whether S. was most likely to have written *sound* or *south*, which involves the question of which is the better word. Steevens tells us that the thought might have been borrowed from Sidney's *Arcadia* (book i.), and he quotes a part of the passage. We must look, however, at the context. Sidney writes, 'Her breath is more sweet than a gentle south-west wind, which comes creeping over flowery fields and shadowed waters in the extreme heat of summer.' The comparison is here direct. The sweet

breath of Urania is more sweet than the gentle south-west wind. Sidney adds, 'and yet is nothing, compared to the honey-flowing speech that breath doth carry.' The music of the speech is not here compared with the music of the wind — the notion of fragrance is alone conveyed. If in the passage of the text we read *south* instead of *sound*, the conclusion of the sentence, 'Stealing, and giving odour,' rests upon the mind; and the comparison becomes an indirect one between the harmony of the dying fall and the odour of the breeze that had passed over a bank of violets. This, we think, is not what the poet meant. He desired to compare one sound with another sound. Milton had probably this passage in view when he wrote:

> 'Now gentle gales,
> Fanning their odoriferous wings, dispense
> Native perfumes, and *whisper* whence they stole
> Those balmy spoils.'

The image in Milton, as well as in Shakspere, combines the notion of sound as well as fragrance. In Shakspere, 'the sound that breathes' — the soft murmur of the breeze playing amid beds of flowers — is put first, because of the 'dying fall' of the exquisite harmony; but in Milton the 'perfumes' of the 'gentle gales' are more prominent than 'the whisper,' because the image is complete in itself, unconnected with what precedes. Further, Shakspere has nowhere else made the *south* an odour-breathing wind; his other representations are directly contrary. In *As You Like It* [iii. 5. 49], Rosalind says: —

> 'You foolish shepherd, wherefore do you follow her,
> Like *foggy south, puffing with wind and rain?*'

In *Romeo and Juliet* [i. 4. 103], we have the dew-dropping *south;* in *Cymbeline* [ii. 3. 136], 'the *south-fog* rot him.' We prefer, therefore, on all accounts, to hold to the original text." White remarks: "*Sound* appears in the authentic text, and, to say the least, is com-

prehensible and appropriate, and is therefore not to be disturbed, except by those who hold that S. must have written that which they think best. But did Pope, or the editors who have followed him, ever lie musing on the sward at the edge of a wood, and hear the low sweet hum of the summer air, as it kissed the coyly-shrinking wild flowers upon the banks, and passed on loaded with fragrance from the sweet salute? If they ever did, how could they make this change of *sound* to *south?* and if they never did, they are unable to entirely appreciate the passage, much less to improve it."

The main and direct comparison is between the music and the murmur of the wind; this is at once strengthened and beautified by the reference to the odour. It will be noticed that the poet dwells on this secondary comparison; he is not satisfied with describing the wind as breathing on the *bank of violets*, but adds the exquisite *stealing and giving odour*. Milton has a *direct* comparison of sound to fragrance in a very beautiful passage in *Comus*, 555 fol.: —

> "At last a soft and solemn-breathing sound
> Rose like a steam of rich distill'd perfumes,
> And stole upon the air, that even Silence
> Was took ere she was ware, and wish'd she might
> Deny her nature, and be never more,
> Still to be so displac'd."

Clarke thinks that S. may also have remembered Bacon's sentence of similar beauty: "The breath of flowers is far sweeter in the air (where it comes and goes like the warbling of music) than in the hand."

It may be added that this is not the only passage in which S. has blended metaphors drawn from two of the five senses. There is another instance in *Ham.* iii. 1. 163 in that most pathetic utterance of Ophelia: —

> "And I of ladies most deject and wretched,
> That suck'd the honey of his music vows,"

where two kinds of sweetness are combined, appealing to taste and hearing. See also the description of Perdita's violets in *W. T.* iv. 4. 121: —

> "Violets dim,
> But sweeter than the lids of Juno's eyes
> Or Cytherea's breath."

The commentators have assumed that *sweeter* as applied to Juno's eyes must mean "more fragrant," on account of the reference to "Cytherea's *breath*"; and some of them have even been driven to supposing that S. alluded to the Oriental practice of giving the eyelids "an obscure violet colour by means of some pigment, which was doubtless perfumed" — a sort of painting with which both Perdita and the poet would have been disgusted. But here again we simply have a comparison combining two senses — sight and smell. The violets, Perdita says, are lovelier than the blue-veined lids of Juno's eyes and more fragrant than Cytherea's breath. The reference to the eyelids is illustrated by *V. and A.* 482: "Her two blue windows faintly she upheaveth;" where the *windows* are the eyelids, which are called *blue* on account of their "blue veins" (*R. of L.* 440). They are called *windows* again in *Cymb.* ii. 2. 22: —

> "The flame o' the taper
> Bows toward her, and would under-peep her lids,
> To see the enclosed lights, now canopied
> Under these windows, white and azure, lac'd
> With blue of heaven's own tinct;"

and the blue veining is also exquisitely introduced. See also *R. and J.* iv. 1. 100: "the eyes' windows fall."

9. *Spirit.* Monosyllabic, as often in S. *Quick* = lively, vigorous; as often.

10. *That.* In that. Cf. *Macb.* iii. 2. 32, etc.

12. *Validity.* Value; as in *R. and J.* iii. 3. 33, etc. In *A. W.* v. 3. 192, it is used with reference to a *ring*. *Pitch* was literally a term in falconry, for the height to which the bird soars. It is often

used figuratively; as in the present passage. See also the quotation in note on 1 above, and *R. and J.* i. 4. 21, *Rich. II.* i. 1. 109, etc.

13. *Abatement.* Lower estimation (Schmidt).

14. *Fancy.* Love; as often. Cf. ii. 4. 33 and v. 1. 391 below.

15. *Alone.* Preëminently, *par excellence* (Schmidt). Cf. *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 119: "That must needs be sport alone;" *A. and C.* iv. 6. 30: "I am alone the villain of the earth," etc. *High fantastical* = highly imaginative. Some print "high-fantastical."

16. *Go hunt.* Cf. *go look* (i. 5. 137), *go see* (iii. 3. 20), etc. For the play on *hart*, cf. *J. C.* iii. 1. 207, *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 260, etc.

22. *Like fell and cruel hounds.* The allusion is to the story of Actæon. Cf. *T. A.* ii. 3. 63 and *M. W.* ii. 1. 122, iii. 2. 44. Malone says that S. undoubtedly had in mind Daniel's 5th *Sonnet:* —

> "Whilst youth and error led my wand'ring mind,
> And sette my thoughts in heedles waies to range,
> All unawares a goddesse chaste I finde,
> (Diana like) to worke my suddaine change.
> * * * * * * *
> My thoughts, like hounds, pursue me to my death, etc.

Malone adds that Daniel seems to have borrowed the comparison from Whitney's *Emblems*, 1586: —

> "those whoe do pursue
> Theire fancies fonde, and thinges unlawfull crave,
> Like brutishe beastes appeare unto the viewe,
> And shall at length Actæon's guerdon have:
> And as his howndes, so theire affections base
> Shall them devoure, and all theire deedes deface."

But the story was familiar, and S. had doubtless read it in Golding's *Ovid.*

26. *Element.* The air, or sky; as in iii. 1. 60 below. See also *J. C.* i. 3. 128, *Hen. V.* iv. 1. 107, etc. *Heat* is a noun = course. Johnson made *heat* a participle, as in *K. John*, iv. 1. 61: "The

iron of itself, though heat red-hot." Herford explains *seven years' heat* as "seven summers."

28. *Cloistress.* Nun ; used by S. only here.

30. *Eye-offending.* Cf. *K. John*, iii. 1. 47 : "foul moles and eye-offending marks." So *heart-offending*, in 2 *Hen. VI.* iii. 2. 60. The metaphor in *season* (= preserve, keep fresh, as in the use of brine to preserve meats) is a favourite one with S. Cf. *A. W.* i. 1. 55, *R. and J.* ii. 3. 72, *Much Ado*, iv. 1. 144, and *L. C.* 18.

32. *Remembrance.* A quadrisyllable ; as in *W. T.* iv. 4. 76 : "Grace and remembrance be to you both."

35. *Golden shaft.* Cf. *M. N. D.* i. 1. 170 : "By his best arrow with the golden head." In both passages there may be an allusion to the two arrows mentioned by Ovid (*Met.* i. 466) ; the one that causes love being "all of gold, with point full sharp and bright" (Golding's translation). Cf. Sidney's *Arcadia :* "But arrowes two, and tipt with gold or lead." The leaden arrow was supposed to "slake love," or destroy it.

38. *Are all . . . fill'd*, etc. The folio prints the passage thus : —

> "When Liuer, Braine, and Heart,
> These soueraigne thrones, are all supply'd and fill'd
> Her sweete perfections with one selfe king."

It is commonly printed as follows : —

> "When liver, brain, and heart,
> These sovereign thrones, are all supplied and fill'd
> (Her sweet perfections) with one self king."

Perfections is here considered to be in apposition with *thrones*, but the arrangement is very awkward. It seems better to read "perfection," making the word refer to the preceding sentence. Clarke, who adopts this emendation, remarks that S. has alluded to this notion, "that a woman was perfected by marriage," in *K. John*, ii. 1. 437 : —

> "He is the half part of a blessed man,
> Left to be finished by such a she ;

And she a fair divided excellence,
Whose fulness of perfection lies in him."

Knight quotes Lord Berners's translation of Froissart: "my daughter should be happy if she might come to so great a perfection as to be conjoined in marriage with the Earl of Guerles." Staunton cites Overbury, *The Wife*: —

"Marriage their object is; their being then,
And now perfection, they receive from men;"

and Donne, *Epithalamium*: —

"Weep not, nor blush, here is no grief nor shame;
To-day put on perfection, and a woman's name."

See also on ii. 4. 41 below. The Cambridge ed. follows the folio, simply inserting a comma after *supplied*, making *perfections* the subject of *filled* (that is, "her sweet perfections are filled with one self-king"), but the inversion seems un-Shakespearian. *Perfection* is a quadrisyllable.

39. *One self king.* One sole king; namely, Love.

41. *Lie rich.* Cf. *A. W.* i. 2. 49: —

"His good remembrance, sir,
Lies richer in your thoughts than on his tomb."

See also *R. and J.* v. 3. 303.

Scene II. — 4. *Elysium.* Douce thinks that there is a play on *Illyria* and *Elysium*, but, as Furness remarks, this is utterly out of keeping with Viola's character.

6. *Perchance.* By chance; a kind of play upon the composition of the word.

9. *Split.* Cf. *Temp.* i. 1. 65: "We split, we split!" See also *Id.* v. 1. 223, *C. of E.* i. 1. 104, and 2 *Hen. VI.* iii. 2. 411.

10. *Those poor number.* The folio reading, changed by Rowe to

"that poor number." The recent editors generally retain *those*, considering *number* as virtually plural. Cf. i. 5. 91: "these set kind of fools." The folio, which is generally accurate in these contractions, has "saved," not "sav'd," but it is probably a misprint.

11. *Driving.* Drifting. S. does not use *drift* as a verb.

12. *Provident.* Used by S. only here and in *Hen. V.* ii. 4. 11.

14. *Liv'd upon the sea.* We still say, "A boat could not *live* in such a sea."

15. *Arion.* The allusion is to the classical story of the minstrel Arion, who, when the sailors were about to murder him for his money, asked leave to play a "swan-song" before he died, after which he threw himself into the sea, and was borne safely to land by one of the dolphins that had gathered about the ship to listen to his music. The folios have "Orion"; and I have seen the same blunder in a modern guide-book in the description of a piece of statuary somewhere in Europe. Halliwell-Phillipps remarks that the simile was familiar to the poet and his audience, not merely from the classical story, but from its frequent introduction into the masques and pageants of the day. On the passage, cf. *Temp.* ii. 1. 113 fol.

16. *Hold acquaintance with.* Cf. *A. W.* ii. 3. 240: "I have a desire to hold my acquaintance with thee," etc.

21. *Country.* A trisyllable, as in *Cor.* i. 9. 17: "As you have been; that's for my country;" and 2 *Hen. VI.* i. 1. 206: "And common profit of his country." See 5 (*c*), p. 133 above.

22. *Bred.* Perhaps = begotten, not brought up, as in the familiar modern phrase "born and bred," and in *M. for M.* iv. 2. 135: "A Bohemian born, but here nursed up and bred." But it may be a careless inversion of ideas such as we find now and then in S. Furness compares *Much Ado*, iv. 1. 228: "lack'd and lost." See also "dies and lives" in *A. Y. L.* iii. 5. 7.

25. *A noble duke*, etc. "I know not whether the nobility of the name is comprised in *duke* or in *Orsino*, which is, I think, the name

of a great Italian family" (Johnson). The duke is called *count* in the rest of the play. See i. 3. 113, i. 4. 9, etc., below. Cf. the use of *duke* for *king* in *L. L. L.* ii. 1. 38, *Ham.* iii. 2. 249, etc.

28. *I have heard*, etc. "One of Shakespeare's subtle touches in dramatic art. By the mention of Viola's father having spoken of the Duke we are led to see the source of her interest in Orsino; and by the word *bachelor* we are made to see the peculiar nature of that interest" (Clarke). But, as Spedding notes, she thinks "that if he were still a bachelor there would be no female court; therefore no fit place for her. Hearing that he was not married, but going to be, her next most natural resource would be the lady he was going to marry — a lady, it seemed, well suited to her case, for she was also an orphan maid, mourning the recent loss of an only brother; and it was only on learning that there was no chance of obtaining access to her that she resolved to disguise her sex and seek service at the court in the character of a page. This would provide for her immediate necessity; and for her next step she would wait till she saw her way."

30. *Late.* For the adverbial use, cf. iii. 1. 39 and v. 1. 217 below.

32. *'T was fresh in murmur.* It was a recent rumour.

33. *Less.* Inferior in rank. Cf. *Macb.* v. 4. 12: "Both more and less have given him the revolt."

35. *What 's she?* Who is she? Cf. i. 3. 52 and i. 5. 119 below.

36. *A virtuous maid.* Not a "widdowe," as John Manningham took her to be. See p. 10 above.

40. *The company*, etc. Hanmer's emendation of the folio reading, "the sight And company of men." Furness thinks that the recollection of *bred and born* above, with that of *lack'd and lost*, "might reasonably give us pause" in accepting the transposition.

42. *And might not be*, etc. That is, until a fit time shall come for revealing my sex and condition. Cf. *L. L. L.* iv. 2. 72: "upon the mellowing of occasion;" and for *deliver'd* = shown, discovered, cf. *Cor.* v. 3. 39: "The sorrow that delivers us thus chang'd;" and *Id.* v. 6. 141: —

"I 'll deliver
Myself your loyal servant," etc.

The folio has "delivered," but it is probably a misprint. See on 10 above.

48. *Though that.* For *that* as a "conjunctional affix," cf. i. 5. 315, iii. 1. 157, etc., below.

49. *Close in.* Cf. *M. of V.* v. 1. 65 : —

"But whilst this muddy vesture of decay
Doth grossly close it in, we cannot hear it."

On the passage, cf. iii. 4. 349 fol. : "Thou hast, Sebastian," etc.

53. *Me.* The "redundant object." Cf. i. 5. 260 below : "I see you what you are," etc.

56. *As an eunuch.* Viola was presented to the duke as a *page*, not as a *eunuch*, which would have been inconsistent with the plot of the play (Mason). Malone notes that eunuchs were employed to sing in the pope's chapel as early as the year 1600 ; and he compares *M. N. D.* v. 1. 45 : —

"The battle of the Centaurs, to be sung
By an Athenian eunuch to the harp."

59. *Allow me*, etc. Prove me to be well worthy, etc.

62. *Mute.* Cf. *Hen. V.* i. 2. 233 : "Like Turkish mute ; " and *Cymb.* iii. 5. 158 : "a voluntary mute to my design."

SCENE III. — 1. *A plague.* Cf. 1 *Hen. IV.* i. 2. 6 : "What a devil hast thou to do with the time of the day ? " See also *Id.* iv. 2. 56.

7. *Except before excepted.* A law phrase (*exceptis excipiendis*). Halliwell-Phillipps quotes West's *Simboleography*, 1605 : "and all other the demised premises and appurtenances (except before excepted), according to the true meaning of these presents," etc.

9. *Modest.* Moderate ; as often. Cf. iv. 2. 34 below.

20. *Tall.* Steevens says the word means "stout, courageous." Schmidt recognizes this sense in *A. and C.* ii. 6. 7 : "much tall youth ; " but elsewhere, as he notes, it is used thus only in irony (as by Falstaff in *M. W.* ii. 2. 11), or with braggardism (as by Shallow, in *M. W.* ii. 1. 237), or in ridicule (as in *R. and J.* ii. 4. 31), or put into the mouth of mean persons, like Bottom, Grumio, Bardolph, Pistol, et al. It probably has that sense here.

27. *Viol-de-gamboys.* Sir Toby's corruption of *viol da gamba*, an instrument which was held between the legs (*gamba* = leg in Italian) of the player, like the modern violoncello. Halliwell-Phillipps, among other contemporaneous references to it, quotes Middleton, *Trick to Catch the Old One*, 1608 : "She now remaines at London to learne fashions, practise musicke, the voyce betweene her lips, and the violl betweene her legges."

30. *All most natural.* The folio has "almost naturall," which many editors retain ; but Upton's emendation is approved by Dyce, Furness, and others. There is a play on the ordinary sense of *natural* and that of a fool ; as in *Temp.* iii. 2. 37 : "That a monster should be such a natural." See also *A. Y. L.* i. 2. 52 fol.

33. *Gust.* Taste, relish. Cf. *Sonn.* 114. 11 : "Mine eye well knows what with his gust is greeing." In *T. of A.* iii. 5. 54 it is = notion, idea ; and in *W. T.* i. 2. 219 it is used as a verb = perceive.

34. *The gift of a grave.* Mr. Locke Richardson suggests that Maria means that with his prodigality, his folly, and his quarrelsomeness, he may come to grief in a duel, and have to be buried like a pauper — literally "have the *gift* of a grave."

36. *Substractors.* Warburton thought it necessary to change Sir Toby's blunder for "detractors" to "subtractors."

42. *Coystril.* A mean fellow. The word occurs again in *Per.* iv. 6. 176 (a scene probably not written by S.).

43. *A parish-top.* "A large top was formerly kept in every village, to be whipped in frosty weather, that the peasants might be kept warm by exercise, and out of mischief, when they could not

work" (Steevens). The custom is often alluded to in the literature of that time.

44. *Castiliano vulgo.* "Spanish of Sir Toby's own making" (Schmidt), and not easily translated. Warburton changed it to "Castiliano volto," and explained it as = "put on your Castilian countenance; that is, your grave, solemn looks." Even if that is the meaning, the blunder is probably intentional, as in *viol-de-gamboys* above. Clarke thinks it may mean, "Be as reticent as a Castilian now that one of the common herd is coming."

51. *Accost.* S. uses the word only here.

59. *Board.* Accost, address; as often. Cf. *M. W.* ii. 1. 92, *L. L. L.* ii. 1. 218, etc.

71. *Thought is free.* A proverbial expression. Holt White quotes Lyly, *Euphues*, 1581: "None (quoth she) can judge of wit but they that have it; why then (quoth he) doest thou think me a fool? Thought is free, my Lord, quoth she."

72. *Bring your hand to the buttery-bar*, etc. "A proverbial phrase among forward Abigails, to ask at once for a kiss and a present" (Dr. Kenrick). The *buttery* was the place where food and drink were kept, and the *bar* was where these were served out. Cf. *T. of S.* ind. 1. 102: —

> "Go, sirrah, take them to the buttery,
> And give them friendly welcome every one;
> Let them want nothing that my house affords."

73. *Sweet-heart.* Printed as two words in the folio. It is accented on the last syllable by S. except in *W. T.* iv. 4. 164 and 2 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 197.

75. *It 's dry.* A dry hand was considered a sign of age and debility (see 2 *Hen. IV.* i. 2. 204), or of a cold nature. Maria plays upon this sense of *dry* and the familiar one of thirsty, as she afterwards quibbles on *barren*, which sometimes meant *witless;* as in *Ham.* iii. 2. 46. For *dry* = dull, stupid, cf. i. 5. 42.

83. *Canary.* Wine from the Canary Islands. Cf. *M. W.* iii. 2.

89 : "I will to my honest knight Falstaff, and drink canary with him."

88. *Beef.* Cf. *T. and C.* ii. 1. 14 : "Thou mongrel beef-witted lord!" which, however, may mean "with no more wit than an ox" (Schmidt). Halliwell-Phillipps quotes Borde, *Regyment of Healthe*, 1567 : "Beefe is good meate for an Englysshman, so be it the beest be yonge, and that it be not cowe flesshe, for olde befe and cowe flesshe doth ingendre melancholy and leprouse humours"; and Randolph's *Poems:* —

> "Ere they compose, they must for a long space
> Be dieted as horses for a race.
> They must not bacon, beef, or pudding eat;
> A jest may chance be starv'd with such grosse meat."

96. *Fencing, dancing, and bear-baiting.* All these were fashionable amusements of the time. See also on iii. 1. 122.

98. *An excellent head of hair.* Mr. Joseph Crosby in an article on "Shakespeare's Puns" in the *American Bibliopolist* (June, 1875, p. 143) says : "I well remember how sorely puzzled I used to be over this dialogue. . . . I was reluctantly on the point of giving up the conundrum when it dawned on me that the facetious knight had made a pun — a first-class pun too — on the word *tongues;* and then all was clear, and the joke 'as plain as the way to parish-church.' His imagination had seized upon Sir Andrew's *tongues* and converted them into *tongs* — curling-tongs — the very article required in Sir Andrew's toilet to 'mend' his hair withal, which, without their assistance, hung 'like flax on a distaff,' and most persistently and stubbornly refused to 'curl by *nature*.'" *Tongues* and *tongs* were pronounced alike. In the early eds. *tongues* is sometimes spelt "tongs" or "tonges." But, as Furness notes, Mr. Crosby was not the first to explain the pun.

115. *There 's life in 't.* Cf. *Lear,* iv. 6. 206 : "Then, there 's life in 't."

120. *Kickshawses.* Spelt "kicke-chawses" in the 1st and 2d

folios. Some editors give "kickshaws," but the blunder was no doubt intentional. Cf. 2 *Hen. IV.* v. 1. 29: "pretty little tiny kickshaws."

123. *I will not compare*, etc. This was probably meant to be a piece of the knight's stupid irrelevancy; but various attempts have been made to explain it. Warburton thought it "a satire on that common vanity of old men, in preferring their own times and the past generation to the present." Steevens says: "Aguecheek, though willing enough to arrogate to himself such experience as is commonly the acquisition of age, is yet careful to exempt his person from being compared with its bodily weakness." Clarke thinks that an *old man* is = "a man of experience," and that "the word *old* gives precisely that absurd effect of refraining from competing in dancing, fencing, etc., with exactly the antagonist incapacitated by age over whom even Sir Andrew might hope to prove his superiority."

125. *Galliard.* A lively French dance. Cf. *Hen. V.* i. 2. 252; the only other instance in which *S.* has the word.

128. *The mutton.* The pun here shows that the association of capers with boiled mutton is as old as that of apple-sauce with roast goose on which Romeo quibbles in *R. and J.* ii. 4. 85. Cf. also the reference to beef and mustard in *T. of S.* iv. 3. 23 and *M. N. D.* iii. 1. 197.

129. *Back-trick.* A caper backwards in dancing. Schmidt thinks there may be a quibble on "the trick of going back in a fight"; but perhaps that is giving Sir Andrew credit for too much wit. Some explain the word as = a back-handed stroke with the sword.

133. *Mistress Mall's picture.* Steevens has been generally followed in explaining this as a reference to Mary Frith, otherwise known as "Mall Cutpurse," a noted character of Shakespeare's time, of whom a full account may be found in Chambers's *Book of Days*, vol. ii. p. 670; but if she was born in 1589 (or even in 1584, as Malone says), it is hardly probable that, with all her precocity

in bad ways, she had become notorious in 1600 or 1601, when this play was written. No allusion to her of so early a date has been found by the commentators, the earliest being a more than doubtful one of 1602. A book entitled *The Madde Prancks of Merry Mall of the Bankside*, by John Day, was published in 1610; and Middleton and Dekker made her the heroine of a comedy, *The Roaring Girl, or Moll Cutpurse*, printed in 1611. Schmidt remarks: "Perhaps Sir Toby only means to say: like a picture intended for a beauty, but in fact representing Mall, the kitchen-wench." Mr. John F. Marsh (*Notes and Queries*, July 6 and Nov. 30, 1878) argues that *Mall's* is = Maria's. I am inclined to agree with Singer that "*Mistress Mall* is a mere impersonation, like 'my lady's eldest son' in *Much Ado*." On the practice of protecting pictures by curtains, cf. i. 5. 242 below.

135. *Coranto*. Another lively dance, for which see *Hen. V.* iii. 5. 33 and *A. W.* ii. 3. 49.

138. *Under the star*, etc. An astrological allusion. Cf. i. 4. 35, ii. 1. 3, and ii. 5. 155, 183 below.

140. *Flame-coloured*. Rowe's emendation of the "dam'd colour'd" of the folios. We have *flame-coloured* in 1 *Hen. IV.* i. 2. 11: "flame-coloured taffeta." Sundry other emendations have been proposed, and attempts have been made to explain the folio reading. *Stock* = stocking; as in *T. G. of V.* iii. 1. 312, *T. of S.* iii. 2. 67, and 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 130. Steevens quotes *Jack Drum's Entertainment*, 1601: "Or would my silk stock should lose his gloss else."

144. *That 's sides and hearts*. In that classic annual, *The Old Farmer's Almanac*, may still be seen the ancient astrological figure of the human body with lines radiating from its various parts to the symbols of the zodiacal signs; and in the column devoted to the "moon's place" in the calendar pages the names of the parts of the body are given instead of the corresponding signs. It is to be noted that Sir Andrew and Sir Toby are both wrong in the parts they assign to Taurus. The latter either burlesques the former's

ignorance or takes advantage of it for the sake of argument. Taurus was supposed to govern the neck and throat.

SCENE IV. — 3. *Three days.* As Mr. P. A. Daniel points out in his paper "On the Times or Durations of the Action of Shakspere's Plays," read before the New Shakspere Society, Nov. 8, 1878, there is a statement inconsistent with this in v. 1. 100 below, where the Duke says : "*Three months* this youth hath tended on me."

5. *Humour.* Capriciousness (Furness). Cf. *A. Y. L.* i. 2. 278: "The duke is humorous;" *K. John,* iii. 1. 119: "her humorous ladyship" (Fortune), etc.

9. *Count.* See on i. 2. 25 above.

13. *No less but.* No less *than.* Cf. *M. for M.* v. 1. 237: "No more But instruments," etc.

I have unclasp'd, etc. The metaphor is a favourite one with S. Cf. 1 *Hen. IV.* i. 3. 188 : "And now I will unclasp a secret book." See also *Much Ado,* i. 1. 325, *W. T.* iii. 2. 168, and *T. and C.* iv. 6. 60.

16. *Access.* S. accents the word on either syllable.

20. *Spoke.* Said. Cf. *Macb.* iv. 3. 154, *Oth.* v. 2. 327, etc.

22. *Unprofited.* Profitless; used by S. nowhere else.

27. *Attend.* Cf. *R. of L.* 818: "Will tie the hearers to attend each line," etc.

28. *Aspect.* The regular accent in S. The folio has "Nuntio's" for *nuncio.* The change of case was made by Theobald, but is perhaps not absolutely required.

30. *Yet.* Implying that Viola's youthful appearance will last for many a day to come (Furness).

32. *Rubious.* Red, rosy; used by S. only here. Cf. "rubied" in *Per.* v. prol. 8. On *pipe* = voice, cf. *Cor.* iii. 2. 113: —

> "my throat of war be turn'd,
> Which quired with my drum, into a pipe
> Small as an eunuch, or the virgin voice
> That babies lulls asleep!"

33. *And sound.* Some would change this to "in sound"; but as Clarke notes, *sound* = clear, uncracked. A boy's voice is *shrill*, but not, like a girl's, perfectly *sound*, or pure in tone.

34. *Semblative.* Seeming like, suited to. Female parts on the stage were then played by boys. S. uses *semblative* only here; and the same is true of *constellation* in the next line. For the astrological allusion in the latter word, see on i. 3. 138 above.

39. *As freely*, etc. "That is, as free to use my fortune as I am."

41. *Barful.* Full of impediments; another word used by S. only once.

SCENE V. — 3. *Hang thee.* This must be said playfully; as the worst punishment inflicted on the domestic fool appears to have been whipping. Cf. *A. Y. L.* i. 2. 91, *Lear*, i. 4. 197, etc.

6. *Fear no colours.* Fear no enemy; probably at first a military metaphor, as Maria explains just below. The expression occurs again in 2 *Hen. IV.* v. 5. 94. Halliwell-Phillipps quotes Cotgrave, *Fr. Dict.*: "*Adventureux*, hazardous, adventurous, that feares no colours"; and *The Trumpet of Fame, by H. R.*, 1595: —

> "Then fear no colours, set the chance on Christ!
> He is your load-star, God of power highest."

9. *Lenten.* "Scanty, poor, answering modest expectations" (Schmidt). Johnson explains the phrase as = "a *lean*, or as we now call it, a *dry* answer." Clarke suggests that while Maria seems to praise the clown's answer for being *brief*, she hints that it is *scant* or *bare* of wit.

15. *Let them use their talents.* Make the best use of such abilities as they have.

17. *Or to be turned away.* The folio joins this to what precedes, and that construction has been defended.

20. *For turning away*, etc. As for being turned away, I care not, so that it be in summer, when I can find employment in every field and lodging under every hedge (Steevens).

25. *If one break.* Maria plays upon the word *points* as applied to the metal hooks by which the *gaskins,* or galligaskins (a kind of loose breeches), were attached to the doublet, and thus kept from falling down. Cf. *T. of S.* iii. 2. 49: "with two broken points." See also 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 238 and *A. and C.* iii. 13. 157.

29. *A piece of Eve's flesh.* Cf. *Much Ado,* iv. 2. 85, *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 68, etc.

31. *You were best.* Originally the pronoun was dative (it were best for you), but it came to be regarded as nominative.

36. *Quinapalus.* A philosopher known only to the clown.

42. *Dry.* Sapless, insipid, dull. Cf. *A. Y. L.* ii. 7. 39: —

> "his brain,
> Which is as dry as the remainder biscuit
> After a voyage;"

and see also *L. L. L.* v. 2. 373, *T. and C.* i. 3. 329, etc.

44. *Madonna.* Cf. Florio, *Worlde of Wordes,* 1598: "*Madonna,* mistres, mistres mine, madam."

47. *Dishonest.* Lewd (Schmidt); as in *M. W.* iii. 3. 196, iv. 2. 104, *Hen. V.* i. 2. 49, etc. So *honest* often = chaste; as in *M. W.* i. 4. 148, ii. 1. 247, ii. 2. 230, *Oth.* iii. 3. 384, iv. 2. 12, 38, etc.

48. *Botcher.* Mender of old clothes (Schmidt). Cf. *A. W.* iv. 3. 211: "a botcher's prentice in Paris"; *Cor.* ii. 1. 98: "a botcher's cushion," etc.

51. *Syllogism.* The word is used by S. nowhere else.

52. *So.* So be it, well and good. Cf. *M. of V.* i. 3. 170: "If he will take it, so; if not, adieu."

57. *Misprision.* Mistake, misapprehension. Cf. *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 90: —

> "Of thy misprision must perforce ensue
> Some true love turn'd, and not a false turn'd true;"

Much Ado, iv. 1. 187: "There is some strange misprision in the princes," etc.

58. *Cucullus non facit monachum.* A cowl does not make a

monk; that is, wearing motley does not prove me a fool. For *motley*, cf. *A. Y. L.* ii. 7. 34, 58, etc.

As much to say as. The same arrangement occurs in 2 *Hen. VI.* iv. 2. 18, and is found in other writers of the time.

62. *Dexteriously.* The 4th folio changes the word to "dexterously"; but the blunder was probably intentional.

65. *Good my mouse of virtue.* For *mouse* as a term of endearment, cf. *Ham.* iii. 4. 183: "call you his mouse," etc. For the arrangement, cf. "good my lord," etc.

66. *Idleness.* Pastime, means of whiling away an idle hour. Schmidt explains it as "frivolousness, vanity." Furness remarks: "The interpretation of *idle* should be always approached with fear and trembling. . . . It is the most fatal single word in dramatic literature, possibly in all literature. Owing to Macready's interpretation of it in Hamlet's 'I must be idle,' twenty-three persons were killed outright, and as many more horribly mutilated." This was in the riot at the Astor Place Opera House, in New York, May 10, 1849.

78. *Decays.* For the transitive sense, cf. *Sonn.* 65. 8: "Nor gates of steel so strong but Time decays." See also *Cymb.* i. 5. 56.

86. *Barren.* Dull; as in *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 13: "The shallowest thick-skin of that barren sort," etc. See on i. 3. 75 above.

87. *With* = by; as very often.

91. *These set kind.* Cf. *Lear*, ii. 2. 107: "These kind of knaves I know," etc. See also i. 2. 10 above. For *crow*, cf. *A. Y. L.* ii. 7. 30 and *T. G. of V.* ii. 1. 28.

92. *Fools' zanies.* Subordinate buffoons whose office it was to make awkward attempts at mimicking the tricks of professional clowns. The word occurs again in *L. L. L.* v. 2. 463.

94. *Distempered.* Disordered, diseased. Cf. *Ham.* iii. 2. 312, etc.

96. *Bird-bolts.* Blunt-headed arrows. Cf. *Much Ado*, i. 1. 43 and *L. L. L.* iv. 3. 25.

97. *Allowed.* Licensed. Cf. *L. L. L.* v. 2. 478: "go, you are

allow'd" (that is, as here, a licensed fool). In Hollyband's *Dictionarie*, 1593, mention is made of "an allowed cart or chariot."

100. *Leasing.* A euphemism for lying (Schmidt). Cf. *Cor.* v. 2. 22: "Have almost stamp'd the leasing." Johnson explains the passage thus: "May Mercury teach thee to lie, since thou liest in favour of fools!" Heath more aptly suggests that the Fool humorously intimates that "whoever undertook the defence of fools would have plentiful occasion" for lying.

103. *Much desires.* The omission of the relative is common.

109. *Speaks nothing but madman.* Cf. *Hen. V.* v. 2. 156: "I speak to thee plain soldier"; *Oth.* ii. 3. 281: "speak parrot," etc.

117. *For — here he comes,* etc. I adopt the pointing of the Cambridge ed. The common reading is, "for here he comes, one of thy kin, has [that is, *who* has] a most weak *pia mater*."

118. For *pia mater*, cf. *L. L. L.* iv. 2. 71 and *T. and C.* ii. 1. 77. In Holland's translation of Pliny's *Nat. History*, it is spoken of as "the fine pellicle called *pia mater*, which lappeth and enfoldeth the braine."

119. *What.* Who. Cf. i. 2. 35 and i. 3. 52 above.

124. *Pickle-herring.* Many of the editors have followed Malone in changing this to "pickle-herrings"; but it is a legitimate plural, like *trout, salmon*, and other names of fishes. Cf. *Lear*, iii. 6. 33: "two white herring." The regular form of the plural is also used, as in the case of some other nouns of this class. See iii. 1. 37 below. Clarke quotes the *Spectator*, where "pickled herrings" is mentioned as a nickname, and adds: "Thus Sir Toby, asked what sort of gentleman the youth at the gate is, intends to describe him scoffingly, while a reminiscence of his last-eaten provocative to drink disturbs him in the shape of a hiccup"; but I doubt whether any such double meaning was intended.

135. *Above heat.* According to Steevens, this means "above the state of being warm in a proper degree." Schmidt makes *heat* = thirst; and compares *K. John*, iii. 1. 341: "A rage whose

heat hath this condition," etc. Clarke, who adopts Steevens's explanation, refers to Falstaff's eulogium on "sherris-sack," 2 *Hen. IV.* iv. 3. 110: "The second property of your excellent sherris is the warming of the blood," etc.

137. *Crowner.* Rowe thought it necessary to change this to "coroner"; but, as Schmidt notes, "the Shakespearian form of the word is *crowner.*" He uses it only here and in *Ham.* v. 1. 4, 24.

151. *He has.* The folio has "Ha 's," and some editors print "Has."

152. *A sheriff's post.* It was the custom for a sheriff to have posts set up at his door, to which proclamations and other public notices were affixed. Jonson, in his *Every Man Out of his Humour*, refers to these "Shrives posts"; and many similar illustrations might be cited from writers of the time.

159. *Personage.* Personal appearance; as in *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 292: "And with her personage, her tall personage," etc. Cf. Udall's *Roister Doister*, 1553: "For your personage, beautie, demeanour and wit."

161. *Squash.* An immature pea-pod. See *M. N. D.* iii. 1. 191; and for *peascod*, *A. Y. L.* ii. 4. 52. *Codling*, used by S. only in this passage, obviously means here an unripe apple. The present English application of the word to a particular kind of apple was unknown in his day.

163. *In standing water.* That is, between the ebb and the flood of the tide (Schmidt). Cf. *Temp.* ii. 1. 221: "Well, I am standing water." The use of *in* (= in the condition of) is not infrequent.

164. *Well-favoured.* Good-looking. Cf. *Much Ado*, iii. 3. 15, *Lear*, ii. 4. 259, etc. See also *favour* (= face, aspect) in ii. 4. 25 and iii. 4. 313, 366 below.

165. *Shrewishly.* Sharply, pertly. S. uses the word nowhere else. *Shrewish* occurs only in *C. of E.* iii. 1. 2, and *shrewishness* only in *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 301. Clarke remarks here: "It is worthy of note, not only how Olivia is so much struck by the sauciness of the page-messenger, whose manner is so different from the usual

deference with which Orsino's envoys treat her as to interest her in the youth even before she sees him, but it is also to be remarked how Viola assumes flippancy when coming from the Duke, although, while in his house, speaking to either himself or his gentlemen, she maintains the most quiet, distant, and even reservedly dignified speech and conduct."

176. *Unmatchable.* Cf. *K. John*, iv. 3. 52: "And this so sole and so unmatchable," etc.

182. *Comptible.* Sensitive, or "susceptible" (Harness). S. uses the word only here.

188. *Are you a comedian?* "Olivia's sarcasm at the *acting a part* which the delivery of a *set speech* implies" (Clarke). Furness suggests that "the sting is in the word *comedian*, the social brand thereby implied being almost of the lowest."

189. *Profound.* Sage, wise; as in *L. L. L.* iv. 3. 168: "profound Solomon."

192. *Usurp.* Cf. v. 1. 242 below: "my masculine usurp'd attire."

193. *Most certain*, etc. Furness paraphrases thus: "If it be in your power to give away the lordship of this house, it is so rightfully your duty to do it that, if you do not do it, you are a usurper of the lord on whom you should bestow it — that is, of course, on Orsino." For myself, I doubt whether there is any such reference to the "lordship of the house." Viola has pretended that she does not know Olivia is the lady of the house. When Olivia admits that she is that lady, Viola recognizes her as the lady to whom she has been sent, and whom her master loves. In reply to Olivia's "If I do not usurp myself," she says in substance: "You *do* usurp yourself in not giving yourself to the man who loves you and is worthy of you. This gift of yourself is yours to bestow, for it is not already pledged to another, and therefore you should not refuse Orsino's suit." That the lady does not love him does not occur to Viola as a reason for refusing him; she herself loves the man and feels that Olivia must certainly come to love him if she marries him. Furness

adds: "In thus earnestly pleading Orsino's cause, Viola was here, I think, for a moment betrayed into seriousness. She instantly sees, however, that this tone is premature, and apologizes, 'But this is *from* my commission.' Her bearing is forced and unnatural, even flippant, until Maria has retired, then it becomes serious, and every word comes from her heart." I agree with Furness entirely except in his explanation of *what*, which seems to me to refer unquestionably to Olivia's very *self*, not merely to "the lordship of her house."

195. *From.* Away from, apart from. Cf. *Temp.* i. 1. 65: "Which is from my remembrance"; and v. 1. 335 below: "Write from it if you can."

198. *Forgive.* Excuse you from, spare you the trouble of. Cf. *L. L. L.* iv. 2. 147: "I forgive thy duty," etc.

202. *Feigned.* Cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 3. 19: "No, truly; for the truest poetry is the most feigning," etc.

205. *Not mad.* Some editors omit *not;* but Clarke remarks: "S. has sometimes these *apparent* antitheses; and here we believe he means Olivia to say, 'If you are not quite without reason, be gone'; giving the effect of antithetical construction without actually being so."

207. *Skipping.* Wild, frolic, mad (Johnson). Cf. *M. of V.* ii. 2. 196: —

> "take pain
> To allay, with some cold drops of modesty,
> Thy skipping spirit."

See also *L. L. L.* v. 2. 771 and 1 *Henry IV.* iii. 2. 60. For the allusion to the *moon* as causing *lunacy* (I need not refer to the derivation of the word), cf. *Oth.* v. 109, etc.

210. *Swabber.* One who scrubs the deck of a ship. Viola takes up the nautical metaphor of *hoist sail*, and turns it contemptuously against Maria. Cf. *Temp.* ii. 2. 48: "The master, the swabber, the boatswain, and I," etc. *Hull* means, literally, to drift to and fro without sails or rudder; here = to float. Cf. *Rich. III.* iv. 4. 438: "And there they hull"; and *Hen. VIII.* ii. 4. 199: —

"Thus hulling in
The wild sea of my conscience, I did steer
Toward this remedy."

211. *Some mollification*, etc. Something to pacify your gigantic waiting-maid; a hit at the diminutive Maria, with an allusion to the *giants* who guard ladies in the old romances. "It is pleasant to see the playful tone that Viola falls into now that she is with those of her sex" (Clarke).

212. *Tell me your mind*, etc. There seems to be some corruption here. Hanmer and some other editors have adopted the conjecture of Warburton that *Tell me your mind* belongs to Olivia, and *I am a messenger* to Viola. Dyce believes that something more than the names of the speakers is omitted in the folio. Furness is inclined to accept Capell's explanation of the folio text, that Viola's "Tell me your mind" is = "Shall I have this favour from you?" alluding to what she had just asked; or, as Hunter puts it, "Viola evidently appeals to Olivia whether she will suffer Maria to turn her out of the house so unceremoniously." Furness thinks that "it is not extravagant to picture Maria's zeal as so warm that she attempts to force Viola from the apartment." The context does not give the slightest support to this explanation, but, aside from that, it seems to me a mere "trick of desperation." The *petite* Maria would not attempt to put a young man out of doors, but if she had done it Olivia would not have allowed it to pass without a sharp reproof. I let the old text stand because I am not entirely satisfied with the only emendation that has been suggested; but as it stands, it is to me utterly inexplicable.

216. *It alone concerns your ear.* It concerns your ear alone. The transposition is not uncommon.

217. *Taxation.* Claim, demand.

223. *My entertainment.* My reception, the way I have been treated. Cf. *Temp.* i. 2. 465: "I will resist such entertainment" (that is, treatment); and *V. and A.* 1108: "Witness the entertainment that he gave."

224. *Maidenhead.* Changed by Theobald to "maidhood"; but in the time of S. the word was = *maidenhood*, to which it is etymologically equivalent. Cf. *Godhead*, etc.

230. *Comfortable.* Comforting. For the active sense, cf. *Rich. II.* ii. 2. 76: "Uncle, for God's sake, speak comfortable words." See also on ii. 1. 27.

242. *We will draw the curtain.* See on i. 3. 133 above. Cf. *T. and C.* iii. 2. 49: "Come, draw this curtain, and let's see your picture." Halliwell-Phillipps quotes *Skialetheia*, 1598: —

> "Oh, sir, she 's painted, and you know the guise,
> Pictures are curtaind from the vulgar eyes."

243. *Such a one I was this present.* The reading of the folio, and perhaps corrupt. Various emendations have been proposed: as "I *wear* this present," "such a one *as* I was," "such a one I was *as* this *presents*," "such a one I *am* at this present," etc. Furness aptly suggests that Olivia's words are "an attempt to be jocular to hide the embarrassment caused by removing her veil to allow an exceedingly handsome young man to gaze on her face, and she says in effect, 'Such a one I was an instant ago,' before she removed her veil, and of course, such she still remains."

246. *In grain.* Cf. *C. of E.* iii. 2. 108: "No, sir, 't is in grain; Noah's flood could not do it" (that is, wash it out); *M. N. D.* i. 2. 97: "purple-in-grain," etc.

248. *Blent.* Used again in *M. of V.* iii. 2. 183; elsewhere (twice) S. has "blended." Cf. Spenser, *F. Q.* i. 6. 42: —

> "Yet ill thou blamest me, for having blent
> My name with guile and traiterous intent."

249. *Cunning.* Skilful; as in iii. 4. 298 below: "cunning in fence," etc.

250. *She.* Cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 11, *Hen. V.* ii. 1. 83, *Cymb.* i. 6. 40, etc.

252. *Leave the world no copy.* Cf. *Sonn.* 11. 13: —

> "She carv'd thee for her seal, and meant thereby
> Thou shouldst print more, nor let that copy die."

See also *Sonn.* 3. 14 and 9. 3 fol.

255. *Labelled.* A legal term, a *label* being = a codicil to a will. Cf. *R. and J.* iv. 1. 57.

256. *Indifferent.* For the adverbial use, cf. i. 3. 139 above.

256. *Grey eyes.* Commonly explained as = blue eyes; but I have no doubt that it means what it says.

259. *Praise.* Appraise; but not an abbreviation of that word, as often printed. Cf. *T. and C.* iii. 2. 97: "praise us as we are tasted; allow us as we prove." Halliwell-Phillipps cites Palsgrave, *Lesclarcissement*, etc., 1530: "I prayse a thynge, I esteme of what value it is, *Je aprise*"; Baret, *Alvearie*, 1580: "A praiser or valuer," etc. Olivia plays upon the word here.

260. *You.* For the "redundant object," cf. i. 2. 53 above.

264. *Nonpareil.* Cf. *Temp.* iii. 2. 108: —

> "And that most deeply to consider is
> The beauty of his daughter; he himself
> Calls her a nonpareil."

265. *With fertile tears.* That is, abundant or copious tears. The *with* is not in the folio; supplied by Pope. *Adorations* is metrically equivalent to five syllables. See on i. 1. 39 above.

270. *In voices well divulg'd.* Well spoken of, well reputed.

271. *Dimension.* Body. Cf. v. 1. 239 below, the only other example of the singular in S.

272. *Gracious.* Full of graces, attractive; as often.

275. *Deadly.* Deathlike, pining.

280. *Cantons.* Cantos. Malone cites *The London Prodigal*, 1605: "in his third canton"; and Heywood, *Preface to Britaynes Troy*, 1609: "in the judicial perusal of these few cantons."

282. *Reverberate.* Reverberant, echoing; as not unfrequently.

Other words in *-ate* (from Latin passive participles) are used both passively and actively.

288. *State.* Estate; as in *M. of V.* iii. 2. 262: "my state was nothing," etc.

294. *Post.* Messenger; as in *M. of V.* ii. 9. 100, v. 1. 48, etc.

298. *Cruelty.* Cf. ii. 4. 82 below.

303. *Blazon.* Literally, an heraldic description of a coat of arms; hence, any description or record. Cf. *M. W.* v. 5. 68: "With loyal blazon," etc.

304. *Unless the master were the man.* Various attempts have been made to explain this. Malone says: "Unless the dignity of the master were added to the merit of the servant, I shall go too far and disgrace myself." Steevens thinks she may mean to check herself by observing, "This is unbecoming forwardness on my part, unless I were as much in love with the master as I am with the man." Clarke makes it = "unless the master's love for me were felt by the man." Olivia evidently wishes that the master and the man could change places, but just what she would have said if she had not checked herself we need not trouble ourselves to guess.

306. *Perfections.* See on i. 1. 39 above.

308. *To creep.* S. often uses the *to* of the infinitive where it is now omitted, and *vice versa.*

310. *Peevish.* Silly; its most common meaning in S.

311. *County's.* Count's; as repeatedly in *R. and J.* and elsewhere.

313. *Flatter with.* Deal flatteringly with, encourage with hopes. Cf. *T. G. of V.* iv. 4. 193: "Unless I flatter with myself too much"; *Rich. II.* ii. 1. 88: "Shall dying men flatter with those that live?"

315. *If that.* See on i. 2. 48 above.

318. *Fear to find,* etc. "I fear that my eyes will seduce my understanding; that I am indulging a passion for the beautiful youth which my reason cannot approve" (Malone); "I fear lest my admiration of this youth prove stronger than my judgment" (Clarke).

320. *Owe.* Own; that is, we are not our own masters. Cf. *Temp.* i. 2. 454: "the name thou owest not," etc.

ACT II

SCENE I. — 1. *Nor will you not.* These double negatives are common in S. For a triple negative, see iii. 1. 162 below: "nor never none," etc.

4. *Malignancy.* S. uses the word nowhere else, *malignity* not at all. For *distemper*, see on i. 5. 94 above.

11. *Determinate.* Fixed. Cf. *Sonn.* 87. 4, etc.

12. *Extravagancy.* Vagrancy; used by S. only here. Cf. the use of *extravagant* in *Ham.* i. 1. 154 and *Oth.* i. 1. 137.

15. *In manners.* Cf. *Sonn.* 85. 1: "My tongue-tied Muse in manners holds her still." We find "with manners" in *Sonn.* 39. 1 and *Cymb.* i. 4. 56. *To express myself* = to reveal myself.

17. *Which I called Roderigo.* No reason for his assuming a false name is hinted at, and I can imagine none.

18. *Messaline.* Cf. v. 1. 234 below. As no such place is known, Hanmer substituted "Metelin," the modern name of *Mitylene.* Furness jocosely suggests that Messaline was "the chief city of Prospero's island."

20. *An.* One. Cf. *Ham.* v. 2. 277: "These foils have all a length," etc.

23. *Breach.* Breaking, surf.

26. *Was yet.* For the ellipsis of the relative, cf. i. 5. 103 above.

27. *Though I could not*, etc. "Though I could not believe that, like those who estimated her at too high a rate" (Schmidt). *Estimable wonder* = "esteeming wonder, or wonder and esteem" (Johnson). For the active sense of *estimable*, cf. *comfortable* in i. 5. 230 above, and *deceivable* in iv. 3. 21 below.

30. *Drowned already*, etc. Cf. *Ham.* iv. 7. 186: —

"Too much of water hast thou, poor Ophelia,
And therefore I forbid my tears."

33. *Your bad entertainment.* The humble way in which I have entertained you as my guest; as *your trouble* = the trouble I have been to you.

36. *Murther me.* Knight suggests that there may be an allusion to the superstition, made use of by Scott in *The Pirate*, that the man who was saved by another from shipwreck would kill his benefactor. But, as Wright suggests, "Antonio seems only to appeal to Sebastian not to kill him as a reward for his love by abandoning him."

41. *The manners of my mother*, etc. Cf. *Hen. V.* iv. 6. 31: "And all my mother came into my eyes."

45. *Gentleness.* Favour, good-will.

Scene II.—6. *To have taken.* By taking; an "indefinite use" of the infinitive, common in S.

10. *So hardy to come.* For the omission of *as*, cf. ii. 4. 98 below: "So big to hold," etc.

12. *She took the ring.* "Viola, perceiving that Olivia has framed an excuse to blind her steward whom she sends, and willing to aid her in screening herself, accepts the version given of the ring's having been sent from Orsino to the Countess; which, moreover, affords a ready and plausible motive for refusing to take it now herself" (Clarke).

18. *Fortune forbid my outside have not*, etc. That is, forbid that it *have*. Cf. *P. P.* 124: "Forbade the boy he should not pass those grounds." Elsewhere the negative is omitted; as in *Sonn.* 58. 1:

"That god forbid that made me first your slave
I should in thought control your times of pleasure," etc.

20. *That sure methought.* The reading of the later folios; the 1st omits *sure*. *Her eyes had lost her tongue;* that is, she was so absorbed in looking at me that she talked distractedly. For *lose*

in this causative sense (= caused the loss of), cf. *Lear*, i. 2. 125: "It shall lose thee nothing."

26. *She were better love.* See on i. 5. 31 above, and cf. iii. 4. 12 below: "your ladyship were best," etc.

28. *Pregnant.* Ready, expert (Johnson and Schmidt). Cf. iii. 1. 92 below.

29. *Proper-false.* Good-looking and deceitful. For *proper*, cf. *M. of V.* i. 2. 77: "a proper man's picture"; *Hebrews*, xi. 23: "a proper child," etc.

30. *In women's waxen hearts*, etc. To make an impression on the soft hearts of women, or to fix their image there. Johnson took it to mean, "How easy is disguise to women! how easily does *their own falsehood*, contained in their *waxen* changeable *hearts*, enable them to assume deceitful appearances!" Steevens compares *R. of L.* 1240: —

> "For men have marble, women waxen minds,
> And therefore are they form'd as marble will;
> The weak oppress'd, the impression of strange kinds
> Is form'd in them by force, by fraud, or skill.
> Then call them not the authors of their ill,
> No more than wax shall be accounted evil
> Wherein is stamp'd the semblance of a devil."

See also *M. for M.* ii. 4. 128: —

> "Nay, call us ten times frail;
> For we are soft as our complexions are,
> And credulous to false prints."

32. *Made of, such.* The folios have "made, if such." The correction was proposed by Tyrwhitt. Johnson wished to read,

> "For such as we are made, if such we be,
> Alas, our frailty is the cause, not we!"

33. *Fadge.* Succeed, prosper. Cf. *L. L. L.* v. 1. 154: "We will have, if this fadge not, an antique." Boswell quotes Florio, *Worlde*

of Wordes: "*Andar' a vanga*, to fadge, to prosper with, to go as one would have it"; and Niccols, *Beggars Ape:* —

> "For who so beares simplicities true badge
> To live in Princes courts doe seldome fadge."

34. *Monster.* Referring to her disguise, which makes her appear a man though really a woman. *Fond* = dote; the only example of the verb in S. Schmidt thinks it may be the adjective.

Scene III. — 2. *Diluculo surgere.* The rest of the adage (which S. found in Lilly's *Grammar*) is "saluberrimum est" (to rise early is most healthful).

10. *The four elements.* Cf. *Sonn.* 45, *Hen. V.* iii. 7. 22, *J. C.* v. 5. 73, etc.

14. *Stoup.* A drinking cup. Cf. *Ham.* v. 1. 68: "Fetch me a stoup of liquor," etc.

17. *The picture of we three.* Alluding to a common old sign representing two fools, with the inscription "We three," the spectator being of course the third. The device is said to be still seen in some parts of England.

18. *Catch.* A song in which the parts follow one another. Cf. *Temp.* iii. 2. 126, 135.

20. *Breast.* Voice. Warton cites the statutes of Stoke College: "which said queristers, after their breasts are broken" (that is, after their voices have changed), etc.; and Fiddes *Life of Wolsey*: "singing-men well-breasted." Halliwell-Phillipps quotes *The Proverbis in the Garet at Lekingfelde:* —

> "A naturall breste is goode with sowndes of moderacion,
> A glorifiede breste is to curyus with notis of alteracion,
> But he that syngithe a trewe songe mesurithe in the meane [tenor],
> And he that rechithe to hye a trebill his tewyns is not clene;"

Udall, *Roister Doister:* "So loe! that is a breast to blowe out a candle," etc.

I had rather, etc. Cf. *M. W.* i. 1. 205: "I had rather than forty shillings I had my Book of Songs and Sonnets here." *Had rather*, though condemned by grammar-mongers, is still good English.

23. *Pigrogromitus.* A philosopher of the same school as Quinapalus.

25. *Leman.* Mistress, sweetheart; as in 2 *Hen. IV.* v. 3. 49: "And drink unto the leman mine." In *M. W.* iv. 2. 172, it is masculine = paramour. In the present passage the folios have "Lemon," and some have thought that the fruit was meant. The two words were often played upon; as in Buttes, *Dyets Dry Dinner*, 1599: "All say a limon in wine is good; some thinke a leman and wine better."

27. *Impeticos thy gratillity.* Johnson wished to read "impeticoat thy gratuity," that is, put it in the pocket of his long coat; but, even if that is the meaning, we need not correct the clown's wording of it. Johnson adds, "There is yet much in this dialogue which I do not understand." I fear that no commentator will make it clear why the Myrmidons are no bottle-ale houses, or fix the exact time of the transit of the equinoctial of Queubus by the Vapians.

28. *Whipstock.* English editors think it necessary to explain that this means the handle of a whip. The word is still in common use in this country.

34. *Testril.* Sixpence; also called a *tester*, as in 2 *Hen. IV.* iii. 2. 296.

If one knight give a —. There is no point after the *a* in the 1st folio; the later ones add the dash. Feste interrupts Sir Andrew.

39. *Good life.* Virtuous conduct or good behaviour (Malone and Schmidt); evidently intended to prepare the way for Andrew's answer. Steevens thought it meant "harmless mirth and jollity," which Furness prefers. Malone quotes *M. W.* iii. 3. 137: "Defend your reputation, or farewell to your good life for ever."

41. *O mistress mine*, etc. The song is probably not by S. It is

found in Morley's *Consort Lessons*, 1599, which seems too early for the date of the play. Furness gives the music of it.

44. *Sweeting.* Cf. *T. of S.* iv. 3. 36: "What, sweeting, all amort?" *Oth.* ii. 3. 252: "All 's well now, sweeting," etc.

Lovers. Some eds. make the word a plural possessive.

53. *In delay*, etc. Cf. *Rich. III.* iv. 3. 53: "Delay leads impotent and snail-pac'd beggary."

54. *Sweet and twenty.* Found elsewhere as a term of endearment. Steevens quotes *Wit of a Woman*, 1604: "Sweet and twenty: all sweet and sweet." Schmidt compares *M. W.* ii. 1. 202: "Good even and twenty." Wright thinks it is "certainly wrong" to regard the phrase as vocative, and explains it as = "sweet kisses, and twenty of them." Furness believes it to be vocative, and finds in it "the indescribable charm which differentiates poetry from prose."

58. *Breath.* Cf. "so sweet a breath to sing" in 20 above; also *M. N. D.* ii. 1. 151: "Uttering such dulcet and harmonious breath," etc.

61. *Make the welkin dance.* "That is, drink till the sky seems to turn round" (Johnson). Cf. *A. and C.* ii. 7. 124: "Cup us till the world go round."

62. *Draw three souls*, etc. Cf. *Much Ado*, ii. 3. 61: "Is it not strange that sheeps' guts should hale souls out of men's bodies?" Warburton sees here an allusion to the three souls of the Peripatetic philosophy; whereupon Coleridge remarks: "O genuine and inimitable (at least I hope so) Warburton! This note of thine, if but one in five millions, would be half a one too much." Weavers were supposed to be good singers and particularly given to singing psalms, being most of them Calvinists and refugees from the Netherlands (Schmidt). Cf. 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 147: "I would I were a weaver; I could sing psalms or anything."

65. *I am dog.* The 3d and 4th folios have "a dog"; but the phrase was a common one. Halliwell-Phillipps cites *Englishmen for my Money:* "I am dogg at this"; *The Devil of a Wife:* "Ay, ay, come I 'm old dogg at that," etc.

70. *Hold thy peace*, etc. This old three-part catch is so arranged that each singer calls another *knave* in turn. It is to be found in a book entitled "Pammelia, Musickes Miscellanie, or mixed Varietie of pleasant Roundelays and delightful Catches of 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10 Parts in one," of which a second ed. was printed in 1618.

80. *Cataian.* A Chinese; *Cataia* or *Cathay* being the name given to China by the early travellers. Tennyson uses it in *Locksley Hall:* "a cycle of Cathay." Nares says the word "was used also to signify a sharper, from the dexterous thieving of those people; which quality is ascribed to them in many old books of travels." Cf. *M. W.* ii. 1. 148: "I will not believe such a Cataian, though the priest of the town commended him for a true man." Sir Toby uses it in a loose way as a mere term of reproach, as a drunken fellow might use "heathen Chinee" nowadays. Steevens cites Davenant, *Love and Honour:* "Hang him, bold Cataian," etc.

81. *Peg-a-Ramsey.* There were two tunes with this name in the time of S. The music of one of them, with that of *Hold thy peace*, etc., may be found in the *Variorum* of 1821. *Three merry men be we* is likewise a fragment of an old song, often quoted in the plays of the time.

82. *Consanguineous.* Used by S. only here; as *consanguinity* is only in *T. and C.* iv. 2. 103.

83. *Tillyvally* was an expression of contempt and impatience. Johnson says that Sir Thomas More's lady was much in the habit of using it, and Nares gives illustrative quotations from Roper's *Life of More.* Dame Quickly corrupts the word into *tillyfally* in 2 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 90. *There dwelt a man*, etc., is from the old ballad of *Susanna*, quoted also by Mercutio in *R. and J.* ii. 4. 151.

85. *Beshrew me.* A mild imprecation, though originally = may evil befall me!

89. *Natural.* Possibly intended to suggest the other sense of the word (see on i. 3. 30), though of course Andrew does not mean it so.

90. *O, the twelfth day*, etc. From some old ballad that has not come down to us.

94. *Honesty*. Decency, propriety. Cf. *Oth.* iv. 1. 288: "It is not honesty in me to speak"; *Hen. VIII.* v. 2. 28: "honesty . . . At least good manners," etc.

95. *Tinkers*. "Proverbial tipplers and would-be politicians" (Schmidt). Cf. 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 20: "I can drink with any tinker," etc.

97. *Coziers'*. Cobblers'. Halliwell-Phillipps quotes Percivale's *Dictionarie*, 1599: "A cosier or cobler, *remendon*"; and Minsheu's *Guide*: "A cosier or sowter, ab Hisp. *Coser*, to sow" (sew).

101. *Sneck up!* "This was a scoffing interjection, tantamount to 'Go hang!' and here has the added humorous effect of a hiccup" (Clarke). Steevens quotes Beaumont and Fletcher, *Knight of the Burning Pestle*: "Give him his money, George, and let him go sneck up," etc. Taylor the Water-Poet has "Snickup, which is in English gallow-grasse," or what in the same passage he calls "a Tiburne hempen-caudell" [rope for the gallows]. *Tyburn* (*L. L. L.* iv. 3. 54) was the usual place for London executions.

102. *Round*. Plain, blunt; as in *Hen. V.* iv. 1. 216, etc. So the adverb = directly; as in *Ham.* iii. 2. 191, etc.

104. *Disorders*. Explained by the following *misdemeanours*. Cf. *Lear*, ii. 4. 202: —

> "I set him there, sir; but his own disorders
> Deserv'd much less advancement," etc.

109. *Farewell, dear heart*, etc. From "Coridon's Farewell to Phillis," which may be found in Percy's *Reliques*. Some of the snatches that follow are from the same song.

122. *Out o' time, sir?* The folio has "Out o' tune sir, ye lye": etc. The emendation is due to Theobald and is adopted by most of the editors. Collier retains the old reading, pointing it "Out of tune! — sir," etc., and making it refer to the Clown; but, as

Dyce remarks, the Clown was a professional singer and would not be likely to be out of tune. It is a drunken iteration of what Sir Toby has said in 89 above. Furness defends the folio.

123. *Dost thou think*, etc. Clarke takes this to be "a fling at Malvolio's Puritanism," and the Clown's swearing by *Saint Anne* as another, such oaths being regarded with abhorrence by the Puritans; but Malvolio is not a Puritan. See comments on the character in the Appendix.

126. *Ginger*. A favourite spice in the time of S., especially with old people. Cf. *M. of V.* iii. 1. 10, *M. for M.* iv. 3, 8, etc.

129. *With crumbs*. That is, to clean it. Cf. Webster, *Duchess of Malfy:* "Tea, and the chippings of the buttery fly after him, to scouer his gold chain." Stewards wore such chains as badges of office.

132. *Rule*. Conduct, behaviour. Cf. *night-rule* in *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 5. Steevens quotes Heywood, *English Traveller:* "What guests we harbour and what rule we keep"; and Jonson, *Tale of a Tub:* "And set him in the stocks for his ill rule."

134. *Go shake your ears*. A common expression of contempt. Halliwell-Phillipps quotes, among other instances, Howell, *Familiar Letters:* "This being one day done, they shut their gates against him, and made him go shake his ears, and to shift for his lodging," etc. Cf. *J. C.* iv. 1. 26, which suggests that the expression is equivalent to calling a man an ass.

136. *The field*. Some adopt Rowe's "to the field." Perhaps, as Schmidt suggests, S. wrote "to field." Cf. *R. and J.* iii. 1. 61: "Marry, go before to field." It seems hardly worth our while to correct Andrew's grammar, particularly when he is drunk.

146. *A nayword*. The folio has "an ayword," which has been explained as "a word always used, a proverbial reproach"; but as S. uses *nayword* in *M. W.* ii. 2. 131 and v. 2. 5, that was probably his word here. There it is = watchword; here it is = byword. Dyce quotes Forby, *Vocab. of E. Anglia:* "Nayword . . . A bye-word; a laughing-stock."

149. *Possess.* Inform, tell. Cf. *M. of V.* iv. 1. 35: "I have possess'd your grace of what I purpose" (cf. *Id.* i. 3. 65), etc.

152. *Puritan.* For other allusions to the Puritans, see *A. W.* i. 3. 56, 98, *W. T.* iv. 3. 46, and *Per.* iv. 6. 9.

160. *Time-pleaser.* Time-server. Cf. *Cor.* iii. 1. 45: "Time-pleasers, flatterers, foes to nobleness." *Affectioned* = affected; used by S. only here. In *L. L. L.* v. i. 4, the 1st folio has "affection" = affectation (the reading of the other folios); and in *Ham.* ii. 2. 464, the quarto has "affection," the folios "affectation."

161. *Cons state* = studies dignity of deportment.

162. *Swarths.* Swaths. The word is used by S. only here; and *swath* only in *T. and C.* v. 5. 25. *Swarth* indicates the pronunciation. *The best persuaded*, etc. = having the best opinion of himself.

170. *Expressure.* Expression; as in *M. W.* v. 5. 71 and *T. and C.* iii. 3. 204. Cf. *impressure* in ii. 5. 99 below.

172. *Feelingly.* Exactly; as in *Ham.* v. 2. 113, etc.

180. *A horse of that colour.* Cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 393: "boys and women are for the most part cattle of this colour."

184. *Ass.* With possibly a play on *as;* as in *M. N. D.* v. 1. 317 on *ass* and *ace.*

191. *Penthesilea.* The queen of the Amazons; an ironical allusion to Maria's diminutive size, like *beagle* below. See also on i. 5. 211 above.

192. *Before me.* By my soul. Cf. *Oth.* iv. 1. 149: "Before me! Look where she comes!"

193. *Beagle.* A small kind of dog. The word is again used figuratively in *T. of A.* iv. 3. 174.

198. *Recover.* Gain, win. Cf. *Temp.* iii. 2. 16: "ere I could recover the shore," etc.

199. *Out.* Out of pocket; still colloquially used in that sense.

201. *Call me cut.* Like "call me horse" in 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 215. As Malone remarks, *cut* was probably synonymous with *curtal* (*A. W.* ii. 3. 65) and = a horse whose tail has been docked.

Cf. *The Two Noble Kinsmen*, iii. 4 : "He 'll buy me a white cut forth for to ride" ; and *Sir John Oldcastle*, 1600 : "But master, pray ye, let me ride upon Cut." Some make it = gelding.

204. *Burn some sack.* Cf. "burnt sack" in *M. W.* ii 1. 223 and iii. 1. 112. *Sack* was "the generic name of Spanish and Canary wines."

SCENE IV. — 3. *Antique.* Quaint. The accent is always on the first syllable.

5. *Recollected.* "Studied" (Warburton). It has been variously defined as "repeated," "refined," "trivial," "light," etc.

11. *Feste.* Possibly, as Clarke suggests, from the Italian *festeggiante* which Florio defines as "Feasting, merrie, banqueting, pleasant, of good entertainment."

18. *Motions.* Emotions ; "often used with reference to love" (Furness). Cf. *M. N. D.* i. 1. 204, *Oth.* i. 3. 113, etc.

21. *The seat*, etc. That is, the heart. Cf. *Oth.* iii. 3. 448 : "Yield up, O Love, thy crown and hearted throne." Malone refers to i. 1. 37 above.

22. *Thou dost speak masterly.* "One of the few instances in which S. indirectly (and of course unconsciously) comments upon himself. Certainly there never was more masterly speaking on the effect produced by music upon a nature sensitively alive to its finest influences than Viola's few but intensely expressive words" (Clarke). For the adverbial use of *masterly*, cf. *W. T.* v. 3. 65 and *Oth.* i. 1. 26.

25. *By your favour.* There is an obvious play upon *favour.* For its use = face, aspect, cf. iii. 4. 346, 400 below.

26. *Complexion.* Personal appearance ; as in *V. and A.* 215 : "Thou art no man, though of a man's complexion," etc. See also ii. 5. 27 below.

29. *Let still the woman*, etc. Some believe that the poet had in mind his own marriage with a woman much older than himself, but this is exceedingly improbable. Furness takes the same view,

and, moreover, does not believe that Orsino's assertion itself is true.

33. *Unfirm.* Cf. *J. C.* i. 3. 4 and *R. and J.* v. 3. 6. S. also uses *infirm;* as in *Macb.* ii. 2. 52, *Lear*, i. 1. 303, etc.

34. *Worn.* Changed by Hanmer to "won." The emendation is plausible, but as *worn* (= forgotten, effaced) gives a good sense, we are hardly justified in displacing it. Cf. 2 *Hen. VI.* ii. 4. 69 : "These few days' wonder will be quickly worn."

37. *The bent.* That is, its tension. The metaphor is taken from the bending of a bow. Cf. *Much Ado*, ii. 3. 232 : "her affections have their full bent," etc.

41. *Perfection.* The word "not only applies to the blown beauty of the rose, but has figurative reference to the full loveliness of a woman when matched with her chosen manly counterpart in married union; thus affording corroboration of the reading *perfection* in i. 1. 39 above" (Clarke).

44. *Spinsters.* In its original sense of female spinners. Cf. *Oth.* i. 1. 24 and *Hen. VIII.* i. 2. 33, the only other instances of the word in S.

45. *Free.* Free from care, happy ; as in *Oth.* iii. 3. 340 : "free and merry," etc.

46. *Use.* Are accustomed. We still use the past tense in this sense, but not the present. Cf. *Temp.* ii. 1. 175, *A. and C.* ii. 5. 32, etc. *Silly sooth* = simple truth (Johnson). For *sooth*, cf. *W. T.* iv. 4. 171 : "he looks like sooth" ; *Macb.* i. 2. 36 : "if I say sooth, etc.

48. *The old age.* The olden time, the primitive age. Cf. *Sonn.* 127. 1 : "In the old age black was not counted fair."

52. *Cypress.* It is doubtful whether this means a shroud of *cypress* or *cyprus* (the modern *crape*), as Warton and Steevens explain it, or a coffin of cypress wood, as Malone makes it. It has been objected to the former that the shroud here is white, but Cotgrave mentions "white cipres." In proof that cypress wood was used for coffins, Malone quotes Speed, who, in referring to the death of

Robert de Vere, speaks of "the cypress chest wherein his body lay embalmed." Wright thinks it is "either a coffin of cypress wood or a bier strewn with branches or garlands of cypress." "Cypress chests" not coffins are mentioned in *T. of S.* ii. 1. 353.

57. *My part of death*, etc. "Though *death* is a *part* in which every one acts his *share*, yet of all these actors no one is *so true* as I" (Johnson).

68. *I take pleasure in singing.* From what Viola says in 1. 2. 58 fol. ("I can sing," etc.) we might infer that S. at first intended that she should do some singing in the play (at this point perhaps), but he seems to have changed his mind afterwards — possibly because the boy in the theatrical company who would take the part of Viola was not a good singer.

73. *Give me now leave*, etc. A courteous form of dismissal. Cf. 1 *Hen. IV.* i. 3. 20, etc.

75. *Taffeta.* A silken fabric; mentioned again in *L. L. L.* v. 2. 159. See also on i. 3. 140 above. Halliwell-Phillipps quotes Taylor the Water-Poet: "No Taffaty more changeable than they."

76. *Opal* alludes to the changeable colour of the stone. Steevens quotes Drayton, *Muses' Elysium*: —

> "With opals more than any one
> We 'll deck thine altar fuller,
> For that of every precious stone
> It doth retain some colour."

S. mentions the stone only here and in *L. C.* 215.

78. *Every where.* Warburton wanted to read "no where"; but, as Mason says, "we cannot accuse a man of inconstancy who has no intents at all, though we may the man whose intents are everywhere, that is, are constantly varying."

82. *Cruelty.* For the concrete use, cf. i. 5. 298 above.

86. *Giddily.* Carelessly, negligently.

87. *That miracle*, etc. That fair frame, that beauteous person

(Clarke). *Pranks* = decks, adorns. Cf. *W. T.* iv. 4. 10: "Most goddess-like prank'd up"; and *Cor.* iii. 1. 23: "For they do prank them in authority."

95. *There is.* A singular verb is often used before a plural subject, particularly with *there is.*

98. *So big to hold.* That is, *as* to hold. See on ii. 2. 9 above.

They lack retention. "This, from the Duke — who has lately affirmed that women's love is firmer and more lasting than men's — is but another point in keeping with his opal-hued mind" (Clarke).

100. *Liver.* For the liver as the seat of love, cf. ii. 5. 102 below. It was also reckoned the seat of courage. Cf. iii. 2. 22 and 66 below.

101. *Cloyment.* Used by S. only here. We find *cloyless* in *A. and C.* ii. 1. 25.

102. *The sea.* Cf. i. 1. 11 above; also *Temp.* iii. 3. 55: "the never-surfeited sea."

103. *Compare.* For the noun, cf. *R. and J.* ii. 5. 43, iii. 5. 238, *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 290, etc.

109. *Lov'd.* For the omission of the relative, cf. i. 5. 103 above.

113. *A worm i' the bud.* Cf. *R. of L.* 848: "Why should the worm intrude the maiden bud?" See also *Sonn.* 35. 4, 70. 7, 95. 2, *K. John*, iii. 4. 82, 1 *Hen. VI.* ii. 4. 68, 71, *Ham.* i. 3. 99, etc.

114. *Thought.* Love; or "brooding over her love."

116. *Like Patience.* Patience is personified, but grief is not. *Smiling* refers to *she*, not to *Patience.* The passage is often mispointed and misunderstood. Cf. *Per.* v. 1. 138: —

> "yet thou dost look
> Like Patience gazing on kings' graves and smiling
> Extremity out of act."

122. *I am all the daughters*, etc. "S., in such speeches as these, has shown not only his knowledge of the depths of feminine nature, but the utmost grace, refinement, and delicacy in fancy of which enigmatic reply is susceptible" (Clarke). *And yet I know not* refers to the possibility that her brother is still living.

126. *Denay*. Denial. Steevens cites examples of the old verb *denay* from Holinshed and Warner, but does not refer to its occurrence (in the folio) in 2 *Hen. VI.* i. 3. 107: "Then let him be denay'd the regentship." S. uses the verb only there, the noun only here.

SCENE V. — 5. *Sheep-biter*. A cant term for a thief (Dyce). Schmidt says it is "evidently = a morose, surly, and malicious fellow"; but the following from Taylor the Water-Poet seems to show that Dyce is right: —

> "And in some places I have heard and seene
> That currish sheep-biters have hanged beene."

The word seems originally to have been applied to a dog that bit or worried sheep; and Taylor may refer to killing (perhaps literally hanging) such a dog. Cf. *M. of V.* iv. 1. 134: "a wolf, who hang'd for human slaughter," etc. In the olden time animals were often tried and executed. Like many other words of the kind, *sheep-biter* doubtless came to be used as a general term of contempt. We find *sheep-biting* in *M. for M.* v. i. 359: "your sheep-biting face."

15. *Metal*. The 1st folio has "Mettle," the later folios "Nettle," which is doubtless a misprint, though some editors have adopted it. *Metal* and *mettle* are used indiscriminately in the folio. *My metal of India* (= my golden girl, my jewel) is an expression quite in Sir Toby's vein.

23. *Caught with tickling*. Steevens cites Cogan, *Haven of Health*, 1595: "This fish of nature loveth flatterie: for, being in

the water, it will suffer itself to be rubbed and clawed, and so to be taken."

26. *Should she fancy.* If she (Olivia) should love. This is the only sense of the verb in S. For the absolute use, cf. *T. and C.* v. 2. 165:—

> "never did young man fancy
> With so eternal and so fix'd a soul."

For *complexion*, see on ii. 4. 26 above.

32. *Jets.* Struts. Cf. *Cymb.* iii. 3. 5: "arch'd so high that giants may jet through." Steevens quotes *Arden of Feversham*, 1592: "And bravely jets it in a silken gown"; and *Bussy d'Ambois*, 1607: "To jet in others' plumes so haughtily." *Advanced* = upraised; as in *Temp.* i. 2. 408: "The fringed curtains of thine eye advance," etc.

34. *'Slight.* A corruption of "God's light"; used again in iii. 2. 14 below. Cf. *'slid* (iii. 4. 375 below), *'sblood* (*Oth.* i. 1. 4), *'sdeath.* (*Cor.* i. 1. 221), *'swounds* (*Ham.* ii. 2. 604), etc.

40. *The lady of the Strachy*, etc. The briefest and most mysterious of love romances immortalized in prose or verse. We may imagine, however, that the pair lived happily ever after, or Malvolio would not have quoted their story as a precedent. The word *Strachy* is printed in the folio with a capital and in italics, as if a proper noun. It has been the subject of much conjecture and discussion. Among the emendations proposed are "Stratarch," "Trachy" (= Thrace), "Straccio," "Strozzi," "Stracci," "Duchy," etc. It may be the corruption of a family name (Italian most likely), in some old story now lost. For almost five pages of comment upon it, see Furness, who himself assumes that the word is probably a misprint.

41. *The yeoman of the wardrobe* was a regular title of office in the time of S. Florio translates *vestiario* by "a wardrobe-keeper, or a yeoman of a wardrobe."

42. *Jezebel.* "Sir Andrew merely knows this name as a term of

reproach ; and his applying a woman's name to a man is of a piece with his other accomplishments " (Clarke).

43. *Deeply in.* " Deeply lost in his wild fancies " (Furness).

44. *Blows him.* Puffs him up. Cf. *Lear*, iv. 4. 27 : " No blown ambition doth our arms incite," etc.

46. *State.* That is, chair of state ; as in 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 416 : " this chair shall be my state," etc.

47. *Stone-bow.* A cross-bow for throwing stones. Coles gives *balista* as the Latin equivalent. Marston, in his *Dutch Courtesan*, 1605, speaks of " those who shoot in stone-bows," etc.

50. *Branched.* Referring to the flowered pattern of the fabric. Cotgrave refers to figured velvet as " branched velvet." *Day-bed* = couch, sofa. The word is used again in *Rich. III.* iii. 7. 72 (" love-bed " in the folios).

54. *The humour of state.* " The high airs, the capricious insolence, of authority."

55. *A demure travel of regard.* Looking gravely about.

62. *My watch.* At the date of the play watches were just beginning to be worn in England. Malone says they were first brought to England from Germany in 1580. Steevens quotes *The Antipodes*, a comedy, 1638 : —

" your project against
The multiplicity of pocket-watches ; "

and again : —

" when every puny clerk can carry
The time o' th' day in his breeches."

With my — some, etc. The dash is not in the folio, and some modern editors omit it, making *my some rich jewel* = some rich jewel of mine. Probably, as Dr. Nicholson has suggested, Malvolio was about to say " with my chain," but " suddenly remembering that he would be no longer a steward, or any other golden-chained attendant [cf. ii. 3. 129 above], he stops short, and then confusedly alters his phrase to *some rich jewel*."

66. *By th' ears.* The 1st folio has "with cars," the later folios, "with cares." Johnson conjectured "with carts," Tyrwhitt "with cables," Walker "with racks," Bailey "with screws," etc. The reading in the text is Hanmer's, and seems to me the best that has been proposed. Clarke defends "with cars," comparing *T. G. of V.* iii. 1. 265 : "a team of horse shall not pluck that from me"; and Sir Toby's own expression "oxen and wainropes cannot hale them together," in iii. 2. 63 below. Furness also is willing to retain "cars." But "cars" are neither horses nor oxen, and S. uses the word only in the sense of chariots or triumphal cars.

78. *Scab.* For the personal use of the word, cf. *Much Ado*, iii. 3. 107, *T. and C.* ii. 1. 31, etc. Halliwell-Phillipps quotes Marlowe, *Dr. Faustus*: "Doctor! you cozening scab!" and *The Divil's Charter*, 1607 : —

> "And by these honors, if I prove a blabbe,
> Then call me villaine, varlet, coward, skabbe."

87. *What employment have we here?* What work have we here? What 's to do here?

88. *Woodcock.* The bird was supposed to have no brains, and was therefore a common metaphor for a fool. Cf. *Much Ado*, v. 1. 158, *T. of S.* i. 2. 161, etc.

92. *Her very C's*, etc. Steevens having observed that there was neither a *C* nor a *P* in the direction of the letter, Ritson suggested that the full direction, according to the custom of the time, would be "*T*o the *U*nknown Beloved, this, and my good wishes, with *C*are *P*resent"; but S. was careless about consistency in these little matters.

93. *In contempt of question.* "Past question" (i. 3. 102 above).

98. *By your leave, wax.* Cf. *Lear*, iv. 6. 258 : "Leave, gentle wax." See also *Cymb.* iii. 2. 35.

99. *Soft!* This is, "in contempt of question," the familiar exclamation = hold! (cf. i. 5. 303 above), but Malone saw in it an allusion to the custom of sealing letters with soft wax

According to Steevens, it was only certain legal instruments for which the soft wax was used. *Impressure* = impression; as in *A. Y. L.* iii. 5. 23. The head of Lucretia was no unusual device on seals.

102. *Liver.* See on ii. 4, 100 above.

108. *Numbers.* Measure, versification; as in *L. L. L.* iv. 3. 57, etc.

111. *Brock.* Badger. Florio defines *tasso* as "a gray, a brocke, a badger"; and Baret has "A brocke, . . . or badger, *Melis.*" It was often used as a term of contempt. Nares quotes *The Isle of Gulls:* "I' faith, old brock, have I tane you?"

116. *M, O, A, I,* etc. Clarke remarks: "Such riddle-like assemblage of initial letters was not unusual, at the time S. wrote, in amatory epistles or gallant mottoes; and he has twice given nearly verbatim the *doth sway my life*, as though it were one of the conventional phrases of love-profession then in vogue." Cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 4: "Thy huntress' name that my full life doth sway."

121. *What dish,* etc. What a dish, etc. Cf. *J. C.* i. 3. 42: "Cassius, what night is this!"

123. *Staniel.* Hanmer's correction of the "stallion" of the folios. The *staniel* was a species of hawk. *Check* was "a term in falconry, applied to a hawk when she forsakes her proper game, and follows some other of inferior kind that crosses her in her flight." Cf. iii. 1. 66 below.

127. *Formal.* Normal, ordinary. Cf. *A. and C.* ii. 5. 41: —

> "Thou should'st come like a Fury crown'd with snakes,
> Not like a formal man."

134. *Sowter.* Here the name of a hound. The word meant a cobbler, as in the quotation illustrating *coziers'*, ii. 3. 97 above.

Though it be. Hanmer made this negative ("be n't"), but Malone explains it thus: "This fellow will, notwithstanding, catch at and be duped by our device, though the cheat is so *gross* that

any one else would find it out." Clarke takes *though it be* as = since it is; and Furness, emphasizing *be* strongly, makes that the meaning (= "because it really *is*").

141. *Suffers under probation.* Is the worse for examination. Cf. *T. of A.* i. 1. 165: "Hath suffer'd under praise."

143. *O shall end.* Johnson thought that *O* here meant "a hempen collar"; but more likely, as Steevens suggests, the idea is, "shall end in sighing"; or in cries of pain, I should suggest. Cf. *R. and J.* iii. 3. 90: "Why should you fall into so deep an O?"

144. *Ay, or I'll cudgel him*, etc. Furness thinks this sounds more like Andrew than Sir Toby, after his longing for a "stone-bow," etc. I see no reason for such change. A cudgelling from Toby would be no "anti-climax."

152. *Are.* Changed by Rowe to "is"; but this "confusion of proximity," as Abbott calls it, is not unfrequent in S. Cf. *J. C.* v. 1. 33: "The posture of your blows are yet unknown." See also *Hen. V.* v. 2. 19, *Ham.* i. 2. 38, etc. For *soft*, see on 99 above.

154. *In my stars.* In my destiny. See on i. 3. 138 above.

160. *Opposite.* Antagonistic, hostile; as in *Rich. III.* iv. 4. 215, 402. Cf. the use of the noun = opponent, in iii. 2. 68 and iii. 4. 242, 280 below.

161. *Tang.* Twang. The only other instance of the verb in S. is in iii. 4. 75 below.

164. *Yellow stockings.* Much worn in the time of S. Steevens cites many allusions to the fashion in contemporaneous writers, and Clarke refers to the evidence of it still existing "in the saffron-coloured hose of the London Blue-Coat or Christ's-Hospital boys, who maintain the same costume as was worn in the time of the royal boy-founder of their school, Edward VI."

165. *Cross-gartered.* The fashion of wearing the garters crossed in various styles is illustrated by several woodcuts in Halliwell-Phillipps's folio ed. Steevens quotes, among other references to the practice, *The Lover's Melancholy*, 1629: "As rare an old youth as ever walk'd cross-gartered."

170. *The Fortunate-Unhappy.* The folio disguises the passage thus: "Farewell, shee that would alter seruices with thee, tht [*sic*] fortunate vnhappy daylight and champian discouers not more: This is open," etc.

171. *Daylight and champaign,* etc. Daylight and an open country cannot make things plainer.

172. *I will read politic authors.* "That is, authors on state-craft; so that his tongue may tang arguments of state" (Furness).

174. *Point-devise.* Exactly, with utmost precision; also spelt *point-device.* Cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 401 and *L. L. L.* v. i. 21.

175. *Jade me.* Make me appear like a jade, make me ridiculous. For the contemptuous use of the noun *jade,* cf. *Much Ado,* i. 1. 145: "a jade's trick," etc.

181. *Strange, stout.* That is, distant, or reserved, and proud, or overbearing. Cf. v. 1. 214 below: "a strange regard"; and 2 *Hen. VI.* i. 1. 187: "As stout and proud as he were lord of all."

192. *The Sophy.* The *Sufi* or Shah of Persia. Cf. *M. of V.* ii. 1. 25: "the Sophy and a Persian prince"; and Bacon, *Essay* 43: "*Ismael,* the *Sophy* of *Persia.*"

199. *O' my neck.* *Of* and *on* were often confounded.

201. *Tray-trip.* A game in which success depended on throwing a *trois* (Nares). It is often mentioned by writers of the time, but by S. only here.

209. *Aqua-vitæ.* "The old name of *strong waters*" (Johnson). Cf. *R. and J.* iii. 2. 88, iv. 5. 16, etc.

212. *A colour she abhors,* etc. I am not aware that any commentator has noted the inconsistency of Maria's assertions that yellow is a colour Olivia abhors and cross-gartering a fashion that she detests, and what she has written in the forged letter: "Remember who commended thy yellow stockings," etc.; which is confirmed by Malvolio when he reads it. Possibly Olivia had spoken ironically; but more likely it is one of S.'s inconsistencies in minor matters.

218. *Tartar.* Tartarus. Cf. *C. of E.* iv. 2. 32: "Tartar limbo, worse than hell"; and *Hen. V.* ii. 2. 123: "vasty Tartar."

ACT III

SCENE I. — 2. *By thy tabor.* The *tabor* (a small drum) was an instrument often used by professional clowns, and Tarleton, the celebrated jester, is represented in an old print as playing on it. Here there is a play upon *by*, but it is not necessary to see in *tabor* any allusion to its use as the sign or name of an inn.

8. *Lies.* Lodges, lives; a common meaning of the word. Cf. *T. G. of V.* iv. 2. 137: "Where lies Sir Proteus?" etc.

11. *To see this age!* Cf. *Ham.* v. 1. 151: "the age is grown so picked," etc.

12. *Cheveril.* Kid; elsewhere used as a symbol of flexibility. Cf. *Hen. VIII.* ii. 3. 32: "your soft cheveril conscience"; and *R. and J.* ii. 4. 87: "a wit of cheveril, that stretches from an inch narrow to an ell broad."

14. *Dally nicely.* Play subtly or sophistically. Cf. *Rich. II.* ii. 1. 84: "Can sick men play so nicely with their names?"

21. *Since bonds disgraced them.* There is some quibble on *bonds*, but it has not been satisfactorily explained.

36. *Pilchards.* The fish "is so like the herring that, according to Lord Teignmouth, they can only be distinguished by the ability of the pilchard to furnish the fat in which it can be fried, which the herring lacks" (White).

40. *The orb.* The earth; as in *A. and C.* v. 2. 85: "But when he meant to quail and shake the orb," etc.

44. *Pass upon.* Make a thrust at; a metaphor taken from fencing. For the literal use, see *Ham.* v. 2. 309: "I pray you, pass with your best violence," etc.

45. *Expenses.* Money to spend. Schmidt makes it "drinking-money."

46. *Commodity.* Consignment, goods sent.

51. *A pair of these.* Referring of course to the coin given him.

52. *Use.* Usury, interest. Cf. *V. and A.* 768: "But gold that 's put to use more gold begets," etc.

53. *Lord Pandarus*, etc. Cf. *T. and C.* i. 1. 98, where Troilus says, "I cannot come to Cressid but by Pandar," etc. See also *M. W.* i. 3. 83: "Shall I Sir Pandarus of Troy become?"

57. *Cressida was a beggar.* According to the story, she finally became a leper and begged by the roadside.

58. *Construe.* Spelt "conster" in the folio, as elsewhere, indicating the common pronunciation. So "misconster" for *misconstrue.*

60. *Welkin.* Sky. See on ii. 3. 61 above; and for *element* in the same sense, i. 1. 26 above.

66. *Not, like the haggard*, etc. The folios have "And like"; the correction was suggested by Johnson. For *haggard* = a wild or untrained hawk, cf. *Much Ado*, iii. 1. 36, etc.; and for *check*, see on ii. 5. 123 above. The meaning seems to be that the Fool must use tact and discrimination in his sallies, not make them at random. The folio reading is inconsistent with the context, but attempts have been made to explain it.

70. *Wise men's folly shown*, etc. The 1st folio reads "wisemens folly falne, quite taint," etc. ("wise mens" in later folios). The reading in the text is Hanmer's, and is adopted by White, who remarks: "The antithesis is plainly between the folly which the fool shows and that which the wise men show. The former is *fit*, that is, becoming; but the latter, being unfit, that is, unbecoming, quite taints their wit, or intelligence." Many editors adopt Capell's reading, "wise men, folly-fallen [that is, fallen into folly], quite taint," etc., and Furness prefers it.

73. *Dieu vous garde.* As Sir Andrew did not know the meaning of *pourquoi* (i. 3. 93 above), some have thought it an oversight on the part of S. that he is made to speak French here; but

we may suppose that he had merely picked up a few phrases, which he airs upon occasion. Viola humours the affectation by replying in French, but Andrew either does not know what *serviteur* (servant) means, or blunders in his usual way in replying *I hope, sir, you are.* Toby (in i. 3. 27) evidently exaggerated Andrew's knowledge of the "tongues." Cf. what Andrew himself says in the *pourquoi* passage. The folio, which invariably corrupts French, has "pur-quoy" for *pourquoi;* and in the present passage, "Dieu vou guard Monsieur" and "Et vouz ousie vostre serviture."

76. *Encounter.* Go towards; in the affected style of the time.

77. *Trade.* Business; as in *Ham.* iii. 2. 346: "Have you any further trade with us?"

79. *List.* Bound, limit; here used affectedly for goal or end, in sportive keeping with Sir Toby's address.

80. *Taste.* Try. Probably meant as another bit of affectation, and not an ordinary metaphor, like "taste their valour" in iii. 4. 256 below.

86. *Prevented.* Anticipated. Cf. *Ham.* ii. 2. 305: "so shall my anticipation prevent your discovery," etc. See also *Psalms,* cxix. 147: "I prevented the dawning of the morning," etc.

92. *Pregnant.* See on ii. 2. 28 above.

113. *Music from the spheres.* For the allusion to the Pythagorean doctrine of the music of the spheres, cf. *A. Y. L.* ii. 7. 6, *M. of V.* v. 1. 60, *A. and C.* v. 2. 84, etc. *Spheres* and *dear* are dissyllables.

114. *Beseech you.* The ellipsis of the nominative is common in such phrases. Cf. "Pray God" in iii. 4. 108, "Prithee" (a corruption of "pray thee") in iii. 4. 116, etc.

115. In *enchantment* there is an allusion to the old idea of love-charms. Cf. *Oth.* i. 2. 63: "thou hast enchanted her," etc.

116. *Abuse.* Deceive; as often. Cf. *Temp.* v. 1. 112, *A. Y. L.* iii. 5. 80, etc.

122. *Baited it.* An allusion to "bear-baiting" (i. 3. 96 above).

Cf. 2 *Hen. VI.* v. 1. 148: "Are these thy bears? we 'll bait thy bears to death," etc.

123. *Receiving.* Ready apprehension. Cf. ii. 2. 11 above.

124. *Cypress.* See on ii. 4. 52 above. Cf. *W. T.* iv. 4. 220: —

> "Lawn as white as driven snow,
> Cyprus black as e'er was crow;"

and Milton, *Il Pens.* 35: —

> "And sable stole of Cyprus lawn,
> Over thy decent shoulders drawn."

Halliwell-Phillipps quotes the *Ballad of Robin Hood, Scarlet, and John*: —

> "Her riding-suit was of sable-hue black,
> Cyprus over her face,
> Through which her rose-like cheeks did blush
> All with a comely grace."

125. *Hideth.* The conjecture of Delius for the "Hides" of 1st folio. The later folios read "Hides my poor heart." Malone took *hear* to be a dissyllable, like *dear* in 113 above, but he was clearly wrong.

126. *Degree.* Step; like *grise* (cf. *Oth.* i. 3. 200) in the next line.

127. *A vulgar proof.* A matter of common experience; as in *J. C.* ii. 1. 21: "'t is a common proof," etc.

136. *Proper.* Comely, handsome; as in *M. N. D.* i. 2. 88, *M. of V.* i. 2. 77, etc.

137. *Westward-ho!* The familiar cry of the boatmen on the Thames, like "Eastward-ho!" The former was taken as the name of a comedy by Dekker, as the latter was by Chapman and Marston.

153. *Maidhood.* Cf. *Oth.* i. 1. 173: "youth and maidhood." See on i. 5. 224 above.

154. *Maugre.* In spite of; used only here and in *T. A.* iv. 2. 110 and *Lear*, v. 3. 131.

157. *For that.* Because. See on i. 2. 48 above.

162. *And that no woman has.* And that has never been given to woman; *that* referring to the idea of "true love" implied in *heart*, *bosom*, and *truth*. For the triple negative in *nor never none*, cf. *A. Y. L.* i. 2. 27: "nor no further in sport neither," etc.

163. *Save* is often followed by the nominative, but I doubt whether it is used for *saved*, as Abbott (*Grammar*, 118) makes it. S. often puts pronouns in the nominative with prepositions.

SCENE II. — 12. *Argument.* Proof. Cf. *Much Ado*, ii. 3. 243, *L. L. L.* i. 2. 175, etc.

14. *'Slight.* See on ii. 5. 34 above.

22. *Liver.* See on ii. 4. 100 above; and for *accosted*, cf. i. 3. 51.

23. *Fire-new.* Fresh from the mint, like *brand-new*. Cf. *L. L. L.* i. 1. 179: "fire-new words"; *Rich. III.* i. 3. 256: "Your fire-new stamp of honour is scarce current," etc.

27. *Sailed into the north*, etc. Mr. C. H. Coote, in a paper on the "new map" of 83 below, read before the New Shakspere Society, June 14, 1878, makes this a reference to the discovery of Northern Novya Zembla by the Dutchman Barenz in 1596, the news of which did not reach Holland until 1598.

33. *Brownist.* The *Brownists* were a Puritan sect, so called from Robert Browne, a noted separatist of Elizabeth's time.

34. *Politician* is generally used by S. in an unfavourable sense. Cf. 1 *Hen. IV.* i. 3. 241, *Lear*, iv. 6. 175, etc.

35. *Build me.* The *me* is the familiar colloquial expletive (like the Latin "ethical dative"); as in the next sentence and in iii. 4. 187 ("scout me") below.

39. *Love-broker.* Agent or "ambassador of love" (*M. of V.* ii. 9. 92).

45. *Curst.* Sharp, waspish; as often. Cf. *W. T.* iii. 3. 135, *Lear*, ii. 1. 67, etc.

47. *With the license of ink.* "With all the freedom of speech which the written word allows" (Furness).

Thou'st him. The use of *thou* towards strangers who were not inferiors was an insult. S. uses the verb only here.

51. *The bed of Ware.* This famous old four-poster was ten feet and nine inches square, and capable of holding a dozen persons. A cut of it may be found in Knight's *Pictorial Shakspere*, in Halliwell-Phillipps's folio ed., and in Chambers's *Book of Days*. Dyce says: "At what inn in Ware it was kept during Shakespeare's days is uncertain; but, after being for many years at the Saracen's Head, it was sold there by auction in September, 1864, and knocked down at a hundred guineas, the newspapers erroneously adding that Mr. Charles Dickens was the purchaser."

52. *Gall.* Cf. *Cymb.* i. 1. 101: "Though ink be made of gall."

56. *Cubiculo.* Chamber, lodging (from the Latin *cubiculum*); another of Sir Toby's "affectioned" words.

57. *Manikin.* Little man; contemptuous. S. uses the word only here.

64. *Wainropes.* Cart-ropes. See on ii. 5. 66 above; and for *hale* (= haul, draw), see *Much Ado* iii. 3. 62, etc.

66. *Liver.* See on ii. 4. 100 above.

67. *Anatomy.* Contemptuous for *body;* as in *R. and J.* iii. 3. 106 (Schmidt).

68. *Opposite.* Opponent. See on ii. 5. 160 above.

70. *Nine.* The wren lays nine or ten eggs at a time, and the last-hatched nestling is generally the smallest of the brood (Steevens). The folio has "mine," which some editors retain. Furness thinks it is probably right.

72. *Spleen.* Apparently here = a fit of laughter or excessive mirth. Cf. *T. of S.* ind. 1. 137: "their over-merry spleen"; *T. and C.* i. 3. 178: "I shall split all in pleasure of my spleen," etc.

73. *Stitches.* Cf. *Temp.* i. 2. 326: —

> "For this, be sure, to-night thou shalt have cramps,
> Side-stitches that shall pen thy breath up."

74. *Renegado.* Apostate; used by S. only here.

76. *Passages.* Acts; as in 1 *Hen. IV.* iii. 2. 8: "passages of life," etc.

79. *Pedant.* Pedagogue; its only sense in S. Cf. *L. L. L.* iii. 1. 179: "a domineering pedant o'er the boy," etc.

80. *A school i' the church.* Halliwell-Phillipps states that the Grammar School at Stratford was at intervals during Shakespeare's time (probably while the schoolhouse was under repair) kept in the adjacent Chapel of the Guild, which was separated only by a lane from New Place. The Chapel was founded in 1269; but the chancel was rebuilt in 1450, and the rest of the edifice in the reign of Henry VII., to which period the schoolhouse also belongs.

83. *The new map*, etc. The editors have generally followed Steevens in seeing here an allusion to a map engraved for Linschoten's *Voyages*, an English translation of which was published in 1598. But, as Mr. Coote has proved in the paper mentioned above (see on 27), this map was not a *new* one, but "a feebly reduced copy of an old one, the latest geographical information to be found on it when *T. N.* appeared being at least thirty years old," and "it showed no portion of the great Indian peninsula." The true *new map* was pretty certainly one which Hallam in his *Literature of Europe* calls "the best map of the 16th century," and which he says is "found in a few copies of the *first* edition of Hakluyt's *Voyages*." This edition, however, was published in 1589, while the map (as it is referred to just above) records discoveries made at least seven years later. "The truth," as Mr. Coote remarks, "seems to be that it was a separate map well known at the time, made in all probability for the convenience of the purchasers of either one or the other of the two editions of Hakluyt" [the second was published in 1598–1600]. The author of the map was probably Mr. Emmerie Mollineux of Lambeth, who was also the first Englishman to make a terrestrial globe.[1]

[1] This globe was brought out in 1592, and "the only example of it known to exist in England is the one now preserved in the Library

The *augmentation of the Indies* on this map consists in "a marked development of the geography of India proper, then known as the land of the Mogores or Mogol, the Island of Ceylon, and the two peninsulas of Cochin-China and the Corea." Japan also "began to assume its modern shape," and there are "traces of the first appearance of the Dutch under Houtman at Bantam (west end of Java), synchronizing almost within a year with that of their fellow-countrymen in Novya Zembla, and which within ten years led to their unconscious discovery, or rather rediscovery, of Australia." It may be added that this map has *more lines* than the one in Linschoten's *Voyages*, there being *sixteen* sets of rhumblines on the former to *twelve* on the latter. Mr. Coote's paper is printed in full in the *Transactions of the New Shakspere Society*, 1877–79, p. 88 fol., with a facsimile engraving of a portion of the map.

85. *I can hardly forbear hurling things at him.* "O mighty Master!" is Furness's apt comment on this feminine touch.

SCENE III. — 8. *Jealousy.* Apprehension. It is often = suspicion; as in *Hen. V.* ii. 2. 126.

9. *Skilless.* Inexperienced. Cf. *Temp.* iii. 1. 53: —

> "How features are abroad
> I am skilless of;"

and *R. and J.* iii. 3. 132: "Like powder in a skilless soldier's flask."

14. *But thanks*, etc. The folio reads: "And thankes: and euer oft good turnes." The emendation is due to Theobald, and is the best of the many that have been proposed.

17. *Worth.* Wealth, fortune. Cf. *R. and J.* ii. 6. 32: "They

of the Middle Temple, with the date altered (by the pen) to 1603." Mr. Coote suggests that, as S. was not unfamiliar with the use of the globe (see *C. of E.* iii. 2. 116, and cf. *R. of L.* 407), "he may possibly have consulted and handled this precious monument of geography, *the first globe made in England and by an Englishman.*"

are but beggars that can count their worth"; *Oth.* i. 2. 28: "the sea's worth"; *Lear* iv. 4. 10: "my outward worth," etc.

18. *What 's to do?* The active use of the infinitive is still good English.

19. *Reliques.* Explained by the *memorials* and *things of fame* in 24 just below.

24. *Renown.* Cf. *Hen. V.* i. 2. 118: "The blood and courage that renowned them," etc. The participle *renowned* is still in use.

26. *His.* Cf. 1 *Hen. VI.* iii. 2. 123: "Charles his gleeks," etc.

29. *Belike.* Probably, very likely; as often. Cf. iii. 4. 256 below.

32. *Bloody argument.* Cf. *Hen. V.* iv. 1. 150: "when blood is their argument"; *Id.* iii. 1. 21: "And sheath'd their swords for lack of argument," etc.

36. *Lapsed.* Surprised, caught (Schmidt). The *New Eng. Dict.* gives it with a ? as = apprehended. The word occurs again in *Ham.* iii. 4. 107, where it is also somewhat perplexing.

37. *Open.* Openly. Cf. *in open* in *Hen. VIII.* iii. 2. 405: "was view'd in open as his queen."

41. *Whiles.* Needlessly changed by some editors to "while." Cf. *Temp.* ii. 1. 217, 284, 310, *J. C.* i. 2. 209, etc.

Scene IV. — 1. *He says he 'll come.* Apparently = Suppose he says he 'll come. Cf. i. 4. 23 above: "Say I do speak with her."

2. *Of.* On. Cf. *A. W.* iii. 5. 103: "I will bestow some precepts of this virgin" ("on" in later folios), etc.

5. *Sad and civil.* Serious and grave. For *sad*, cf. 19 and 78 below; and for *civil*, cf. *R. and J.* iii. 2. 10, etc.

12. *Were best.* See on i. 5. 28 above.

23. *Please one*, etc. The title of an old ballad, from which Furness makes some extracts. *Sonnet* was often used loosely for a short song or poem.

52. *Thy yellow stockings!* Lettsom suggested "My yellow stockings!" as Olivia has no idea that Malvolio is quoting the letter.

57. *Am I made?* It has been suggested by those who believe

that Olivia was a widow (see p. 10 above) that *made* should be "maid"; but this is sufficiently disproved by i. 2. 36 above. Clarke says: "Olivia's surprise is at hearing that she, the rich heiress, the lady of rank, should be supposed to have a chance of making her fortune, of becoming 'a *made* woman.'" Cf. *M. N. D.* iv. 2. 18: "We had all been made men." Furness favours this interpretation.

60. *Midsummer madness.* Steevens quotes from Ray's *Proverbs*, "'T is midsummer moon with you" (that is, you are mad); and Halliwell-Phillipps, among many similar allusions, gives from Palsgrave, 1590: "He wyll waxe madde this mydsommer moone, if you take nat good hede on hym"; and *Poor Richard's Almanack*: "Some people about midsummer moon are affected in their brain."

67. *Miscarry.* Often = come to a bad end, perish, die, etc. Cf. *M. of V.* ii. 8. 29, iii. 2. 318, v. 1. 251, *Cor.* i. 1. 270, *R. and J.* v. 3. 267, etc.

69. *Come near me.* Understand me, know who I am (Wright).

75. *Tang.* Cf. ii. 5. 161 above.

77. *Consequently.* Subsequently, afterwards; as in *K. John*, iv. 2. 240, etc.

79. *Sir.* Lord; as in *Temp.* v. 1. 69: "a loyal sir," etc. *Limed her* = caught her as with bird-lime. Cf. *R. of L.* 88, *Macb.* iv. 2. 34, etc.

82. *Fellow.* He takes the word in the sense of "companion" (Johnson).

83. *Adheres.* Coheres, is in accordance. Cf. *Macb.* i. 7. 52, *M. W.* ii. 1. 62, etc.

85. *Incredulous.* Incredible. Cf. *deceivable* in iv. 3. 21 below, and *unprizable* in v. 1. 56. Many adjectives (particularly in *-ble*, *-ful*, *-less*, etc.) are used by S. in both active and passive senses. See on *comfortable*, i. 5. 230.

91. *In little.* In a small compass. Cf. *L. C.* 91: —

> "For on his visage was in little drawn
> What largeness thinks in Paradise was sawn [sown]."

92. *Legion himself.* Cf. *Mark* v. 9. See also *Ham.* ii. 2. 383.

97. *Private.* Privacy; as in the common phrase *in private.*

110. *Water.* For other allusions to this method of diagnosis, see 2 *Hen. IV.* i. 2. 2 and *Macb.* v. 3. 51. Douce remarks: "Here may be a direct allusion to one of the two ladies of this description mentioned in the following passage from Heywood's play of *The Wise Woman of Hogsdon:* 'You have heard of Mother Nottingham, who for her time was pretty well skill'd in casting of waters: and after her Mother Bombye.'"

121. *Bawcock.* Used like *chuck* (= *chick*) but always masculine (Schmidt). Cf. *W. T.* i. 2. 121, *Hen. V.* iii. 2. 26, iv. 1. 44, etc.; and for *chuck*, *Macb.* iii. 2. 45, *Oth.* iii. 4. 49, iv. 2. 24, etc.

125. *Cherry-pit.* A game in which cherry-stones were pitched into a small hole; mentioned by S. only here. Steevens quotes *The Witch of Edmonton:* "I have lov'd a witch ever since I play'd at cherry-pit."

126. *Collier.* The devil was so called for his blackness. Johnson quotes the old proverb, "Like will to like, quoth the Devil to the collier."

133. *Element.* Cf. iii. 1. 60 above.

140. *Take air and taint.* Be exposed and spoiled.

144. *In a dark room and bound.* On the old-time treatment of the insane, cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 382: "a dark house and a whip," etc.

150. *A finder of madmen.* Alluding to the legal phrase, *finding mad* (cf. *finding guilty*, etc.).

152. *For a May morning.* An allusion to the popular sports and diversions of May-day.

160. *Admire.* Wonder. Cf. *Temp.* v. 1. 154: —

> "these lords
> At this encounter do so much admire
> That they devour their reason," etc.

175. *The windy side.* The safe side; a metaphor taken from hunting. Cf. *Much Ado*, ii. 1. 327: "it keeps on the windy side of care"; that is, "so that care cannot scent and find it."

179. *Upon mine.* Johnson suggested "upon thine"; but, as Mason remarks, the old reading is more humorous. "The man on whose soul he hopes that God will have mercy is the one that he supposes will fall in the combat; but Sir Andrew hopes to escape unhurt, and to have no present occasion for that blessing." Cf. what Dame Quickly says in *Hen. V.* iii. 2. 20: "Now I, to comfort him, bid him a' should not think of God; I hoped there was no need to trouble himself with any such thoughts yet."

185. *Commerce.* Business, intercourse. Cf. *Ham.* iii. 1. 110, etc. *By and by* = presently, soon; as often.

187. *Scout.* Be on the lookout. For *me*, see on iii. 2. 35 above.

188. *Bum-baily.* Changed by Theobald to "bum-bailiff"; but the blunder was no doubt intentional.

190. *Horrible.* For the adverbial use, cf. *unchary*, 213 below.

192. *Gives manhood more approbation.* That is, gets one more credit for manly courage. For *approbation* = *attestation*, cf. *Hen. V.* i. 2. 19: —

> "Shall drop their blood in approbation
> Of what your reverence shall incite us to."

207. *Cockatrices.* For the fabled power of the cockatrice or basilisk to kill with a look, cf. *R. and J.* iii. 2. 47: "the death-darting eye of cokatrice"; *R. of L.* 540: "a cockatrice' dead-killing eye," etc.

213. *On 't.* Some editors adopt Theobald's "out," and Furness approves it; but no change seems called for. I am inclined, with Schmidt, to make *laid on 't* = staked upon it. Cf. *M. of V.* iii. 5. 85: "And on the wager lay two earthly women"; *Ham.* v. 2. 174: "he hath laid on twelve for nine," etc. *Unchary* = heedlessly, recklessly.

217. *Haviour.* Commonly printed "'haviour," but it is not a contraction of *behaviour*.

219. *Jewel.* "Any personal ornament of gold or precious stones" (Schmidt), a piece of jewelry. Thus in *M. of V.* v. 1. 224, it is = a ring; in *Cymb.* ii. 3. 146, a bracelet, etc. Steevens quotes Mark-

ham, *Arcadia*, 1607: "She gave him a very fine jewel, wherein was set a most rich diamond."

228. *A fiend like thee.* That is, if he were like thee.

234. *Attends.* Is waiting for. Cf. *M. W.* i. 1. 279: "the dinner attends you," etc.

235. *Dismount thy tuck* = draw thy sword or rapier. Cf. 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 274: "you vile standing-tuck" (no hyphen in early eds.). Halliwell-Phillipps quotes *Nomenclator*, 1585: "*Verutum*, . . . a rapier; a tucke"; and Cotgrave defines *verdun* as "the little Rapier, called a Tucke." *Yare* = quick, ready. Cf. *A. and C.* iii. 7. 39: "Their ships are yare, yours heavy." See also *Id.* iii. 13. 131, v. 2. 286, *Temp.* i. 1. 7, 37, v. 1. 224, etc. The adverb *yarely* occurs in *Temp.* i. 1. 4 and *A. and C.* ii. 2. 216.

242. *Opposite.* See on ii. 5. 160 above, and cf. 280 below.

246. *Unhatched.* Unhacked. Cf. *hatched* (Fr. *haché*) = cut, engraved, in *T. and C.* i. 3. 65. As Singer remarks, "the word exists still in the technical *cross-hatching* of engravers."

247. *On carpet consideration.* That is, "a mere carpet-knight"; which, according to Clarke, means one "created in times of peace, kneeling on a carpet, and not on the field of battle."

249. *Incensement.* Anger, exasperation; used by S. only here.

251. *Hob, nob.* A corruption of *hab or nab* = have or have not, hit or miss, at random. Holinshed (*Ireland*) has "shot hab or nab at random." Cf. *Hudibras:* "Although set down hab-nab, at random."

254. *Conduct.* Escort; as in *M. of V.* iv. 1. 148, *Hen. V.* i. 2. 197, etc.

256. *Belike.* See on iii. 3. 29 above.

257. *Quirk* = humour, whim. Cf. *A. W.* iii. 2. 51: "quirks of joy and grief," etc. *Taste* = test. See on iii. 1. 80 above.

263. *Meddle.* "Have to do" (Schmidt); as in 294 below. Cf. *R. and J.* i. 2. 40: "the shoemaker should meddle with his yard," etc. Malone compares the vulgar expression, "I 'll neither meddle nor make with it."

273. *A mortal arbitrement.* "A deadly decision, and arbitration by the sword."

285. *Sir priest.* See on iv. 2. 2 below.

286. *Re-enter Sir Toby*, etc. Dyce begins a new scene here, headed "*The Street adjoining Olivia's Garden.*" He says: "Though the folio does not mark a new scene, it is certain that previous to the entrance of the two knights, the audience of Shakespeare's days (who had no painted movable scenery before their eyes) were to *suppose* a change of scene." But, as Furness remarks, "on a stage like Shakespeare's, which made such a constant demand on the imagination, it is conceivable that the two couples might have obeyed the stage-directions of the folios, when at *Exeunt* they retired a few paces, and *Re-entered* by advancing, and all the while have remained but a few paces apart, in full sight of each other, and yet be supposed to be beyond earshot; as Toby left Viola he was supposed to have made his exit, and to have re-entered as he joined Andrew."

288. *Firago.* A corruption of *virago*, unless it be a word coined by Toby. The critics have been troubled because *virago* is feminine; but Schmidt says it is "used at random by Sir Toby to frighten Sir Andrew, who 'has not bestowed his time in the tongues.'" See on ii. 5. 42 above.

289. *Stuck.* The same word as *stock* = *stoccado*, or *stoccata*, a thrust in fencing. Cf. *Ham.* iv. 7. 162: "your venomed stuck."

293. *The Sophy.* See on ii. 5. 192 above.

306. *To take up the quarrel.* That is, to make it up, as we say. Cf. *A. Y. L.* v. 4. 103: "when seven justices could not take up a quarrel," etc.

308. *Is as horribly conceited.* Is possessed with as horrible an idea. For *conceit* = to form an idea, to judge, cf. *J. C.* i. 3. 162, iii. 1. 192, and *Oth.* iii. 3. 149.

311. *Oath sake.* So printed in the early eds., and probably to be explained in the same way as "justice sake" (*J. C.* iv. 3. 19), "sentence end" (*A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 144), etc. Similarly we find in

the folio *fashion sake, heaven sake, recreation sake, sport sake,* etc. Abbott (*Grammar*, 217) recognizes this ellipsis only in disŝyllables ending in a sibilant.

314. *Supportance.* Maintaining, upholding; used only here and (literally) in *Rich. II.* iii. 4. 32: "supportance to the bending twigs."

322. *By the duello.* According to the laws of duelling. Cf. *L. L. L.* i. 2. 185: "the duello he regards not." S. uses the word only twice.

333. *Undertaker.* One who takes a business upon himself, as in *Oth.* iv. 1. 224, the only other instance of the word in S.

338. *If you please.* "The exquisite humour and perfectly characteristic effect of these three words in Viola's mouth, at this juncture, are delightful" (Clarke).

346. *Favour.* Face. See on ii. 4. 24 above.

360. *Part.* For the adverbial use, cf. *Oth.* v. 2. 296: "hath part confess'd his villany," etc.

362. *Having.* Property; as in *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 396, etc. So *my present* = what I now have.

372. *Lying, vainness, babbling drunkenness.* The folio has "lying, vainnesse, babbling drunkennesse." Most editors insert a comma after *babbling;* but Wright and Furness believe both *lying* and *babbling* are adjectives. This is certainly true of *babbling*, but I have my doubts as to *lying.*

380. *Venerable.* Worthy of reverence or worship. It is used metaphorically, as the context shows.

383. *Feature.* For the singular (= "make, exterior, the whole turn or cast of the body," as Schmidt defines it), cf. 1 *Hen. VI.* v. 5. 68: "Her peerless feature, joined with her birth"; *Ham.* iii. 1. 167: "to show virtue her own feature," etc.

385. *Unkind.* Used in a stronger sense than at present, and almost = unnatural. Cf. *J. C.* iii. 2. 187: "the most unkindest cut of all"; *Lear*, iii. 4. 73: "his unkind daughters," etc.

386. *Beauteous-evil.* "A combination similar to *proper-false* in ii. 2. 31" (Furness).

387. *Trunks.* The allusion is to the elaborately carved chests of the poet's time, specimens of which are still to be seen in museums and old English mansions. Schmidt makes *o'erflourished* = "varnished over"; but it more likely refers to the florid carving of these ancient *trunks.* This word is again used figuratively in 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 495, where the Prince calls Falstaff "that trunk of humours."

392. *So do not I.* "This, I believe, means, I do not yet believe myself when, from this accident, I gather hope of my brother's life" (Johnson). It may mean "He believes that he knows me; I do not believe so" (Clarke).

396. *Couplet.* Couple; used by S. only here and in *Ham.* v. 1. 310: "her golden couplets."

398. *I my brother know,* etc. That is, I recognize my resemblance to my brother when I see my own face in a mirror. Furness approves Deighton's explanation: "I know my brother to be mirrored to the life in my person, in myself who am the glass," but this seems a forced interpretation of *in my glass.*

400. *He went,* etc. This seems to be introduced by the poet to explain why Viola is dressed like her brother, which was necessary to their being taken for each other.

402. *If it prove.* That is, "that I, dear brother, be now ta'en for you."

410. *'Slid.* A contraction of "by God's lid" (*T. and C.* i. 2. 228). It occurs again in *M. W.* iii. 4. 24. See on ii. 5. 30 above. *Religious in it;* that is, "one who practises it religiously" (Furness).

ACT IV

SCENE I. — 12. *Vent.* Reed remarks that "this affected word seems to have been in use in Shakespeare's time." There can be no doubt of that, as he has used it himself eight or ten times. See *Temp.* i. 2. 280, *A. Y. L.* ii. 7. 41, *Lear,* i. 1. 168, etc.

14. *This great lubber, the world.* The folio reading, retained by

most of the editors. The meaning seems to be, I am afraid the whole world is growing cockneyish; or, as Johnson puts it, "affectation and foppery will overspread the world." This certainly seems a simpler and more natural explanation than we get from Douce's emendation, "this great lubberly word." As Dyce remarks, it is hardly probable that S. would have made the Clown speak of *vent* as "a great lubberly word," or that "great lubberly" could signify either "imposing" (Badham) or "pretentious" (White). The text seems preferable to any emendation that has been proposed.

15. *Ungird thy strangeness.* Unbend or relax thy reserve. Cf. *strange* in ii. 5. 181 above.

18. *Greek.* Jester, or merry-maker. Cf. *T. and C.* i. 2. 118: "a merry Greek indeed"; *Id.* iv. 4. 58: "the merry Greeks." The Greeks were proverbially spoken of by the Romans as fond of revelry and merriment (Schmidt).

23. *Fourteen years' purchase.* An English technical term in buying land. The current price in the time of S. appears to have been *twelve* years' purchase; and *fourteen years' purchase* may therefore be = a high price.

27. *And there,* etc. The folio has "and there, and there," but the measure requires the third "and there," which Capell added. Such omissions are not uncommon in the early eds.

40. *Well fleshed.* Evidently addressed to Sebastian, not, as some have supposed, to Sir Andrew. *Fleshed* = made fierce and eager for combat, as a dog fed with flesh. Cf. *Hen. V.* iii. 3. 11: "the flesh'd soldier"; *Rich. III.* iv. 3. 6: "flesh'd villains, bloody dogs," etc.

45. *Malapert.* Pert, saucy. Cf. *Rich. III.* i. 5. 255: "Peace, master marquess, you are malapert."

50. *Manners.* Used as singular in *A. W.* ii. 2. 9, *R. and J.* v. 3. 214, etc.

52. *Rudesby.* Rude fellow. Cf. *T. of S.* iii. 2. 10: "a madbrain rudesby, full of spleen."

54. *Extent.* Conduct (Schmidt); as in *Ham.* ii. 2. 390: "my extent to the players." Johnson takes it to be = violence, connecting it with the legal sense of seizure of goods, as in *A. Y. L.* iii. 1. 17.

56. *Fruitless.* Vain, idle. Cf. *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 371: "a dream and fruitless vision."

57. *Botch'd up.* Cf. the use of *botcher* in i. 5. 48 above. See also *Hen. V.* ii. 2. 115 and *Ham.* iv. 5. 10.

59. *Deny.* Refuse, say no. Cf. *M. of V.* iii. 2. 291, *A. W.* ii. 1. 90, *Rich. III.* iii. 1. 35, etc. For *beshrew* as a mild imprecation, cf. *M. N. D.* ii. 2. 54, v. 1. 295, *M. of V.* iii. 2. 14, etc.

60. *Heart.* For the play on the word, see on i. 1. 16 above. Furness does not regard it as a play upon words, but believes it to be "an unconscious adoption of both significations of the word."

61. *What relish is in this?* "How does this taste! What judgment am I to make of it?" (Johnson).

63. *Lethe.* For the allusion to the infernal river whose waters caused forgetfulness, cf. *Ham.* i. 5. 33, 2 *Hen. IV.* v. 2. 72, *A. and C.* ii. 7. 114, etc.

SCENE II. — 2. *Sir Topas.* The title *Sir* was formerly applied to priests and curates in general. Nares explains the usage thus: "*Dominus*, the academical title of a bachelor of arts, was usually rendered by *Sir* in English at the universities; therefore, as most clerical persons had taken that first degree, it became usual to style them *Sir*." Latimer speaks of "a Sir John, who hath better skill in playing at tables, or in keeping a garden, then in God's word."

4. *Dissemble.* Disguise. Singer quotes Hutton's *Dict.*, 1583: "*Dissimulo*, to dissemble, to cloak, to hide."

6. *Tall.* The word has been variously explained, and sundry emendations have been suggested. It may be = stout, robust, (as in i. 3. 20 above), or not of sufficiently commanding presence.

8. *To be said.* To be called.

10. *Competitors.* Confederates, associates. Cf. *L. L. L.* ii. 1. 82: "he and his competitors in oath," etc.

13. *Bonos dies.* Clarke says, "Spanish, good-day." I should have taken it to be Latin.

The old hermit of Prague. "Not the celebrated heresiarch, Jerome of Prague, but another of that name, born likewise at Prague, and called *the hermit of Camaldoli* in Tuscany" (Douce). But, as Wright remarks, "this is treating the Clown's nonsense too seriously."

15. *King Gorboduc.* An old British king.

16. *For what is that,* etc. "A playful satire on the pedantry of logic in the schools" (Clarke).

34. *Modest.* See on i. 3. 9 above.

38. *Bay-windows.* The English editors explain that this is "the name for what are now called *bow-windows.*" I hardly need say that in this country *bay-window* is the term in use. Cf. B. J., *Cynthia's Revels:* "retired myself into a bay-window"; Middleton, *Women beware Women:*—

> "'T is a sweet recreation for a gentlewoman
> To stand in a bay-window, and see gallants," etc.

Boswell says: "Johnson admits only *bay-window* into his Dictionary, and consequently considers *bow-window* as a vulgar corruption."

39. *Clear-stores.* The first folio has "cleere stores," the later ones "cleare stones" or "clear stones." If the former is what S. wrote, it is doubtless equivalent to the Gothic *clerestory;* if the latter, "clear stones," or transparent stones, is nonsense of the same sort as *transparent as barricadoes.* That some of the editors should complain of both readings as "unintelligible" is almost as good a joke as any of the Clown's.

46. *The Egyptians in their fog.* See *Exodus,* x. 21.

50. *Constant.* Consistent, logical. Cf. *constancy* = consistency, in *M. N. D.* v. 1. 26, etc.

52. *Pythagoras.* For other allusions to his doctrine of metempsychosis, see *M. of V.* iv. 2. 54 fol. and *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 187.

55. *Happily.* Most editors adopt Capell's "haply"; but *happily* often occurs with this sense.

61. *Woodcock.* See on ii. 5. 88 above.

66. *For all waters.* That is, fit for anything, like a fish that can swim equally well in all waters (Malone).

74. *Upshot.* Conclusion, final issue; in archery the final shot that decided the match. Cf. *Ham.* v. 2. 395; the only other instance of the word in S.

76. *Hey Robin*, etc. This old ballad may be found in Percy's *Reliques.*

79. *Perdy.* A corruption of *par Dieu.* Cf. *Ham.* iii. 2. 305, *Lear*, ii. 4, 86, etc.

90. *Besides.* Often used as a preposition. Cf. *Sonn.* 23. 2: "besides his part"; *C. of E.* iii. 2. 78: "besides myself," etc. For *five wits*, cf. *Much Ado*, v. 1. 66: "four of his five wits"; *Lear*, iii. 4. 59: "Bless thy five wits!" etc. The term seems to have been first suggested by the five senses, but the senses and the wits were regarded as distinct. See *Sonn.* 141. 9: "my five wits nor my five senses," etc.

96. *Propertied.* Made a property of, taken possession of (as a thing having no will of its own). Cf. *K. John*, v. 2. 79: —

> "I am too high-born to be propertied,
> To be a secondary at control," etc.

100. *Malvolio*, etc. Staunton inserts "[*As Sir Topas*]" here; but it is sufficiently evident that the Clown is playing a double part, and carrying on a colloquy with the imaginary parson.

101. *Endeavour thyself.* Halliwell-Phillipps cites Latimer, *Sermons:* "The devil, with no less diligence, endeavoureth himself to let [see on v. 1. 251 below] and stop our prayers"; and Holinshed, *Chronicles:* "He endevored himself to answer the expectation of his people."

102. *Bibble babble.* Idle talk. Fluellen (*Hen. V.* iv. 1. 71) calls it "pibble pabble." Cf. Florio, *Second Frutes*, 1591: "cast idlenes, slouthfulnes, and thy bible bable aside"; and Heywood, *Spider and Flie*, 1566: "all confused so in such bibble babble."

106. *I will, sir, I will.* "Spoken after a pause, as if, in the mean time, Sir Topas had whispered" (Johnson).

109. *Shent.* Chidden, reproved, or "snubbed." Cf. *M. W.* i. 4. 38: "we shall all be shent." See also *Cor.* v. 2. 104, *Ham.* iii. 2. 416, etc.

113. *Well-a-day that*, etc. Ah that, alas that, etc. Cf. *R. and J.* iv. 5. 15: "O, well-a-day, that ever I was born!" In *Per.* iv. 4. 49: "His daughter's woe and heavy well-a-day" (= grief, sorrow).

116. *Advantage.* For the verb, cf. *Temp.* i. 1. 34: "for our own doth little advantage." See also *Hen. V.* iv. 1. 201, *J. C.* iii. 1. 242, etc.

118. *Are you not mad indeed? or do you*, etc. "You are mad, are you not?" etc. Johnson omitted *not*, and other changes have been suggested, but none is necessary.

130. *Vice.* The fool of the old moralities, doubtless so called from the *vicious* qualities attributed to him. He often carried a *dagger of lath*, with which he used to belabour the devil and sometimes attempted to pare his long nails. Cf. *Hen. V.* iv. 4. 76: "Bardolph and Nym had ten times more valour than this roaring devil i' the old play, that every one may pare his nails with a wooden dagger." See also 2 *Hen. IV.* iii. 2. 343, *Ham.* iii. 1. 98, etc.

137. *Goodman devil. Goodman* was a familiar appellation, and sometimes used contemptuously; as in the "goodman boy" of *R. and J.* i. 5. 79 and *Lear*, ii. 2. 48.

SCENE III. — 3. *Wonder that enwraps me.* Cf. *Much Ado*, iv. 1. 146: "I am so attir'd in wonder," etc.

6. *Was.* That is, had been. *Credit* = belief or opinion.

8. *Golden.* Valuable, excellent; as in *Macb.* i. 7. 33: "golden opinions," etc. Cf. v. 1. 385: "golden time."

9. *Disputes.* Reasons, argues; as in *R. and J.* iii. 3. 63: "Let me dispute with thee," etc.

12. *Instance.* Example, precedent. For *discourse* = reasoning, cf. *Ham.* iv. 4. 36: "such large discourse, looking before and after." Singer quotes from Granville: "The act of the mind which connects propositions, and deduceth conclusions from them, the schools call *discourse*, and we shall not miscall it if we name it *reason*."

14. *Wrangle.* Quarrel or dispute. Cf. *Temp.* v. 1. 174, *M. W.* ii. 1. 88, etc.

18. *Take and give back*, etc. Take affairs in hand and see to their dispatch. The construction (a favourite with S.) is like that in *Macb.* iii. 2. 164: —

> "Speak then to me, who neither beg nor fear
> Your favours nor your hate."

21. *Deceivable.* Deceptive, delusive; as in the only other example of the word in S. See *Rich. II.* ii. 3. 84: "whose duty is deceivable and false." See also on i. 5. 230 and ii. 1. 27 above.

24. *Chantry.* A chapel endowed for the purpose of chanting masses for the souls of the dead. Cf. *Hen V.* iv. 1. 318: —

> "and I have built
> Two chantries, where the sad and solemn priests
> Sing still for Richard's soul."

By = hard by, or near; as in *L. L. L.* v. 2. 94: "into a neighbour thicket by," etc.

26. *Plight me*, etc. This was not an actual marriage, but a *betrothing*, or formal promise of future marriage. It was anciently known by the name of *espousals*, which subsequently came to be applied to the marriage proper, or what is here called the *celebration*. See on v. 1. 263 below.

27. *Jealous.* Anxious, doubtful. Cf. *Hen. V.* iv. 1. 302: —

"My lord, your nobles, jealous of your absence,
Seek through your camp to find you."

29. *Whiles.* Until. Cf. the use of *while* in *Rich. II.* i. 3. 122, *Macb.* iii. 1. 44, etc. *Come to note* = become known. Cf. *W. T.* i. 1. 40: "a gentleman of the greatest promise that ever came into my note," etc.

30. *What time.* At which time, when; a poetical idiom. Cf. *Rich. III.* iv. 4. 490: "Where and what time your majesty shall please"; Milton, *Lycidas*, 28: "What time the gray-fly winds her sultry horn," etc.

34. *And heavens so shine*, etc. Steevens suggests that there may be an allusion to the proverbial saying, "Happy is the bride upon whom the sun shines." But, as Furness remarks, Olivia merely echoes a similar prayer uttered by Friar Lawrence in *R. and J.* ii. 6. 1: —

"So smile the heavens upon this holy act
That after hours with sorrow chide us not!"

ACT V

Scene I. — 7. *To give a dog*, etc. In Manningham's *Diary* (see p. 9 above) there is a story of Dr. Bullein, who had a dog which Queen Elizabeth wanted. . . . She promised that if he would grant her one desire he should have whatever he would ask. She then demanded his dog, which he gave her, and then, claiming the fulfilment of her promise, asked that the dog be given back to him.

23. *Conclusions to be as kisses*, etc. Warburton thought this a "monstrous absurdity," and conjectured, "so that, conclusion to be asked, is," etc. Farmer cites *Lust's Dominion*: —

"*Queen.* Come, let 's kisse.
Moor. Away, away.
Queen. No, no, sayes, I [ay]; and twice away, sayes stay."

Coleridge says: "Surely Warburton could never have wooed by kisses and won, or he would not have flounder-flatted so just and humorous, nor less pleasing than humorous, an image into so profound a nihility. In the name of love and wonder, do not four kisses make a double affirmative? The humour lies in the whispered 'No!' and the inviting 'Don't!' with which the maiden's kisses are accompanied, and thence compared to negatives, which by repetition constitute an affirmative."

31. *Double-dealing.* There is a play on the word, as on *double-dealer* just below, and in *Much Ado*, v. 4. 116.

34. *Grace.* Virtue, as in *R. of L.* 712: "desire doth fight with grace"; *A. Y. L.* i. 3. 56: "as innocent as grace itself," etc.

36. *So much a sinner to be.* For the omission of *as*, see on ii. 4. 98 above.

39. *Triplex.* Triple time in music.

40. *Saint Bennet.* This church was probably St. Bennet's, Paul's Wharf, London, destroyed in the great fire of 1666, but rebuilt by Wren and now used as a Welsh church. There were three other churches by that name in London, but this one was near the Blackfriars Theatre in a neighbourhood familiar to S. *Bennet* = Benedict (not "Benedick," as Schmidt gives it), as in the name of "Sir Bennet Seely" in *Rich. II.* v. 6. 14.

42. *At this throw.* By this trick; alluding to playing with dice or with bowls. Cf. *M. of V.* ii. 1. 33: —

> "If Hercules and Lichas play at dice
> Which is the better man, the greater throw
> May turn by fortune from the weaker hand;"

and *Cor.* v. 2. 20: —

> "Like to a bowl upon a subtle ground,
> I have tumbled past the throw."

46. *Lullaby.* Some take this to be a verb, and it is occasionally used as such; but here it may be a noun: "A lullaby to your bounty," etc.

55. *Bawbling.* Insignificant, like a bauble. Cf. *T. and C.* i. 3. 35: "How many shallow bauble boats dare sail," etc.

56. *Unprizable.* Not to be prized, valueless. In the only other passage in which S. uses the word (*Cymb.* i. 4. 99), it is = invaluable, inestimable. Similarly (as Furness notes) S. uses *unvalued* with opposite meanings in *Ham.* i. 3. 19 and *Rich. III.* i. 4. 27.

57. *Scathful.* Harmful, destructive. Cf. the noun *scathe* (= injury, damage) in *K. John*, ii. 1. 75: "To do offence and scathe in Christendom," etc.; and the verb in *R. and J.* i. 5. 86: "This trick may chance to scathe you."

58. *Bottom.* Still used in the sense of vessel. Cf. *M. of V.* i. 1. 42, *K. John*, ii. 1. 73, and *Hen. V.* iii. chor. 12.

62. *Fraught.* Freight (which is not found in S.). Cf. *Oth.* iii. 3. 449: "Swell, bosom, with thy fraught." We find *fraughtage* in the same sense in *C. of E.* iv. 1. 87 and *T. and C.* prol. 13. For the verb *fraught*, see *Temp.* i. 2. 13, *Cymb.* i. 1. 126, etc. *From Candy;* that is, on her voyage from Candy, or Candia.

63. *Tiger.* Again used as the name of a ship in *Macb.* i. 3. 7: "Her husband 's to Aleppo gone, master o' the Tiger."

65. *Desperate of shame and state.* Reckless of disgrace and the effect upon his *state* or condition.

66. *Brabble.* Brawl, quarrel. Cf. *T. A.* ii. 1. 62: "This petty brabble will undo us all." The word becomes *prabble* in the Welsh dialect of Evans (*M. W.* i. 1. 56, iv. 1. 52, v. 5. 169) and Fluellen (*Hen. V.* iv. 8. 69). We have *brabbler* = quarreller in *K. John*, v. 2. 162.

69. *Distraction.* Madness; as in 317 below. The word is here a quadrisyllable, like *perfection* in i. 1. 39 above.

70. *Notable.* Used oftener by S. in a bad than in a good sense. Cf. *T. G. of V.* ii. 5. 47: "a notable lubber"; *Oth.* v. 1. 78: "O notable strumpet!" etc.

71. *Mercies.* The plural is used because more than one person is referred to; as in 2 *Hen. IV.* v. 5. 130: "I commit my body to your mercies."

72. *Dear.* Heartfelt, earnest; used of both agreeable and disagreeable emotions. Cf. *Ham.* i. 2. 182 : "my dearest foe," etc.

77. *Witchcraft.* Used figuratively; as in *Hen. VIII.* iii. 2. 18: "he hath a witchcraft Over the king in 's tongue," etc.

78. *Ingrateful.* Used by S. oftener than *ungrateful.* Cf. *ingrate* in 114 below.

80. *Wrack.* Wreck; the only spelling in the early eds. It rhymes with *back* in *R. of L.* 841, 966, *Sonn.* 126. 5, *Macb.* v. 5. 51, and with *alack* in *Per.* iv. prol. 12.

82. *Retention.* Reserve. It is used in a different sense in ii. 4. 98 above.

83. *All his in dedication.* Entirely *dedicated* or devoted to him.

84. *Pure.* Purely, merely. For the adverbial use, cf. *Ham.* iii. 4. 158; "live the purer."

85. *Into.* Unto; as often. Cf. *Hen. V.* i. 2. 102 : "Look back into your mighty ancestors," etc.

87. *Being apprehended.* That is, *I* being apprehended. Such ellipsis is common when the pronoun can be easily supplied.

89. *To face me out.* Cf. iv. 2. 98 above : "to face me out of my wits."

90. *Twenty-years-removed.* The hyphens are not in the early eds.

100. *Three months.* See on i. 4. 3 above.

110. *Fat.* Heavy, dull, distasteful. Halliwell-Phillipps quotes Chapman, *Bussy d'Ambois:* "'T is grosse and fulsome."

114. *Unauspicious.* S. uses the word only here, and *inauspicious* only in *R. and J.* v. 3. 111 : "inauspicious stars."

115. *Faithfull'st.* This contraction of superlatives, often very harsh, was a fashion of the time.

119. *The Egyptian thief.* An allusion to the Greek romance of *Theogenes and Chariclea*, which was translated into English before 1587. Thyamis, a robber chief, having fallen in love with Chariclea, seized her and shut her up in a cave with the intent to make her his wife. Being overpowered by another band of robbers, he

rushed to the cave, in order to kill her, but in the darkness slew another person instead.

121. *Sometime.* Used by S. interchangeably with *sometimes*, both adverbially and adjectively.

122. *Non-regardance.* Disregard, contempt; used by S. only here.

123. *And that.* The *that* is used instead of repeating the preceding *since;* as with other conjunctions.

125. *Marble-breasted.* Cf. *marble-hearted* in *Lear*, i. 4. 281. *Marble-constant* (= firm as marble) occurs in *A. and C.* v. 2. 240.

126. *Minion.* Darling, favourite (Fr. *mignon*). In the time of S. it was beginning to be used in the sense of a spoiled favourite, hence of a pert and saucy person, and even more contemptuously.

127. *Tender.* Cherish, regard; as often.

132. *A raven's heart*, etc. Cf. *R. and J.* iii. 2. 76: "Dove-feather'd raven!" and 2 *Hen. VI.* iii. 1. 76:—

> "Seems he a dove? His feathers are but borrow'd,
> For he 's disposed as the hateful raven."

133. *Most jocund, apt, and willingly.* For the ellipsis of the adverbial ending, cf. *J. C.* ii. 1. 224: "look fresh and merrily," etc.

134. *To do you rest.* Cf. *R. and J.* i. 5. 72: "do him disparagement," etc.

139. *Tainting.* Disgracing, exposing to shame. Cf. 1 *Hen. VI.* iv. 5. 46: "My age was never tainted with such shame," etc.

148. *Strangle thy propriety.* Deny thy identity. Cf. *Oth.* ii. 3. 176:—

> "Silence that dreadful bell; it frights the isle
> From her propriety"

(that is, out of herself).

149. *Take thy fortunes up.* That is, accept or acknowledge them.

156. *Newly.* Lately, just now; as very often. See *M. W.* iv. 4. 52, *T. of S.* ii. 1. 174, iv. 2. 86, *R. and J.* iii. 1. 176, v. 3. 175, etc.

157. *A contract*, etc. The *betrothal* referred to in the note on iv. 3. 26 above. It was a legal ceremony, consisting in the interchange of rings, kissing, and joining hands, in the presence of witnesses, and often before a priest. Violation of the contract was punished by the Ecclesiastical Law with excommunication; and it was not until the time of George II. that this penalty was abolished in England. The betrothal was a legal bar to marriage with another person. Henry VIII. took advantage of this in divorcing Anne Boleyn. Before her execution he obtained a decision from the Ecclesiastical Court that the marriage was void, on the ground of her alleged pre-contract with Northumberland. In Scotland to this day the betrothal is a legal contract, the fulfilment of which can be enforced. This ancient betrothal is introduced by S. in at least seven of his plays — *T. G. of V.*, *T. of S.*, *K. John*, *Much Ado*, *M. for M.*, *W. T.* (twice), and *T. N.* It will be noticed that Olivia addresses Sebastian as "husband" in 144 above. Similarly, Robert Arden, the poet's maternal grandfather, in a legal document, calls his daughter Agnes the wife (*uxor*) of the man to whom she was married three months later. Of course she had been betrothed before the document was written. Other instances of the kind are mentioned by Halliwell-Phillipps, who believed that S. and Anne Hathaway had been thus formally betrothed several months before their hurried marriage.

158. *Joinder.* Joining; used by S. only here. We find *rejoindure* in *T. and C.* iv. 4. 38.

160. *Interchangement of your rings.* As already stated, rings were usually exchanged in the betrothal, but there is no clear evidence that this was done in the marriage ceremony, as Steevens asserts.

161. *Compact.* Accented on the last syllable by S. except in 1 *Hen. VI.* v. 4. 163, which is probably not his.

162. *In my function.* In the discharge of my official duty.

163. *Watch.* See on ii. 5. 62 above.

166. *Case.* Integument, skin. Cf. *A. and C.* iv. 15. 89: "The

case of that huge spirit now is cold." Malone quotes Cary, *Present State of England*, 1626 : "Queen Elizabeth asked a knight named Young how he liked a company of brave ladies? He answered, as I like my silver-haired conies at home : the cases are far better than the bodies." Halliwell-Phillipps cites *Bussy d' Ambois :* "the asse, stalking in the lion's case."

168. *That thine own trip*, etc. That you will trip yourself up, be caught in your own snare.

172. *Little.* A little, at least some. Cf. 2 *Hen. IV.* iii. 1. 43 : —

> "It is but as a body yet distemper'd,
> Which to his former strength may be restor'd
> With good advice and little medicine."

Elsewhere S. uses *a little* in this sense, and *little* negatively (= not much, scarce any), as we do now.

176. *Broke my head.* This expression, in the time of S., did not mean a fractured skull, but as Schmidt properly defines it, "to crack the skin of the head so that the blood comes." Cf. *M. W.* i. 1. 125, etc. Similarly, "a broken shin" (*L. L. L.* iii. 1. 74 and *R. and J.* i. 2. 53) means one that is bruised and bloody; but Ulrici misunderstood it in these passages, assuming that the suggestion of a "plantain leaf" as a remedy for the damaged shin was merely "ironical." He says that "the English commentators" are obviously wrong in "considering plantain a good remedy for a broken bone."

177. *Coxcomb.* Used jokingly for the head ; as in *Hen. V.* v. 1. 45, 57, *Lear*, ii. 4. 125, etc.

178. *I had rather than forty pound.* Cf. ii. 3. 20 above. For the plural *pound*, cf. *Much Ado*, i. 1. 90, iii. 5. 27, etc.

183. *Incardinate.* Rowe takes pains to correct this into "incarnate."

185. *'Od's lifelings.* One of the many corruptions of *God* in oaths. Cf. *M. W.* iii. 4. 59 : "'Od's heartlings!" *A. Y. L.* iii. 5.

43: "'Od's my little life!" *Cymb.* iv. 3. 293: "'Od's pittikins!" etc. See also on ii. 5. 34 above.

190. *Bespake you fair.* Spoke kindly to you. Cf. *Rich. II.* v. 2. 20: "Bespake them thus"; *C. of E.* iv. 2. 15: "Didst speak him fair?" *Id.* iv. 4. 157: "they speak us fair," etc.

196. *Othergates.* Otherwise, in another manner; the only instance of the word in S. *Anothergates* was more common. Halliwell-Phillipps quotes Lyly, *Mother Bombie:* "anothergates marriage"; and *Hudibras:* —

> "When Hudibras about to enter
> Upon anothergates adventure," etc.

201. *Agone.* Ago; used by S. only here and in *T. G. of V.* iii. 1. 85: "long agone."

202. *His eyes were set,* etc. Cf. *Temp.* iii. 2. 9: "Drink, servant-monster, when I bid thee; thy eyes are almost set in thy head."

203. *A passy-measures pavin.* The 1st folio has "a passy measures panyn"; the later folios read "Rogue after a passy measures Pavin." Singer and others adopt the reading in the text. *Passy-measure* is a corruption of the Italian *passamezzo,* which is defined by Florio, 1598, as "a passa-measure in dancing, a cinque pace." Steevens cites many references to the *pavin;* as in Beaumont and Fletcher, *Mad Lover:* "I 'll pipe him such a pavan"; Gosson, *School of Abuse,* 1579: "Dumps, pavins, galliards, measures," etc. Ben Jonson, in *The Alchemist,* calls it a Spanish dance. Sir J. Hawkins says that it was "a grave and majestick dance." He adds that every *pavin* had its *galliard* (see i. 3. 125 above), a lighter kind of air derived from the former. Cf. Middleton, *More Dissemblers,* etc.: —

> "I can dance nothing but ill favour'dly,
> A strain or two of passe measures galliard."

Malone says that Sir Toby means only that the surgeon is a rogue and a *grave, solemn coxcomb.* In the first act of the play he has

shown himself well acquainted with the various kinds of dance. Shakespeare's characters are always consistent, and even in drunkenness preserve the traits of character which distinguished them when sober.

208. *Will you help?* etc. The folio reads, "Will you helpe an Assehead, and a coxcombe, & a knaue: a thin fac'd knaue, a gull?" Toby applies the epithets to Andrew, not to the surgeon or to Sebastian, as Malone supposed. For *gull*, see on iii. 2. 63 above.

213. *Wit and safety.* A wise regard for safety. For *wit* = wisdom, cf. *Oth.* ii. 1. 130: —

> "If she be fair and *wise*, fairness and *wit*,
> The one 's for use, the other useth it."

214. *A strange regard.* An estranged or distant look. Cf. ii. 5. 181 and iv. 1. 16 above.

219. *Perspective.* The name was applied to various optical devices for assisting the sight or producing illusions. Tollet quotes from *Humane Industry*, 1661, the following description of one of these contrivances: "It is a pretty art that in a pleated paper and table furrowed or indented, men make one picture to represent several faces — that being viewed from one place or standing, did shew the head of a Spaniard, and from another the head of an ass. . . . A picture of a chancellor of France presented to the common beholder a multitude of little faces; but if one did look on it through a *perspective*, there appeared only the single pourtraicture of the chancellor himself. Thus that, which is, is not, or in a different position appears like another thing." Cf. *Hen. V.* v. 2. 347: "Yes, my lord, you see them perspectively, the cities turned into a maid." *Perspective* is always accented on the first syllable.

222. *Since I have lost thee!* "The warmth of Sebastian's words here to Antonio comes with delightful effect as a response to the sea-captain's affectionate expressions heretofore, and as a comfort for his past distress of mind" (Clarke).

229. *Nor can there be*, etc. That is, I have not the divine power of ubiquity.

231. *Blind.* That is, to "the loveliness they were destroying" (Furness).

232. *Of charity.* Out of charity, for the sake of charity; as *of* is often used in adjurations.

234. *Messaline.* See on ii. 1. 18 above.

236. *Suited.* Dressed. Cf. *A. Y. L.* i. 3. 118: "That I did suit me all points like a man," etc. So *suit* in next line = dress.

239. *Dimension.* Bodily shape. See on i. 5. 271 above.

240. *Participate.* Possess as part of my nature. S. uses the verb only here.

241. *Goes even.* Agrees, coincides. Cf. *Cymb.* i. 4. 47: "to go even with what I heard," etc.

248. *Record.* Remembrance; as in *T. and C.* i. 3. 14, etc. S. puts the accent on either syllable, as suits the measure.

251. *Lets.* Hinders. Cf. *Ham.* i. 4. 85: "I'll make a ghost of him that lets me," etc. See also *Exodus*, v. 5, *Isaiah*, xliii. 13, *Romans*, i. 13, etc.

254. *Jump.* Agree, tally; as in *T. of S.* i. 1. 195: "Both our inventions meet and jump in one," etc. On *cohere*, cf. *adhere*, iii. 4. 74 above.

257. *Where.* That is, at whose house or lodgings. *Where*, as Schmidt notes, is often used loosely for "in which, in which case. on which occasion, and sometimes almost = when." *Weeds* = clothes, garments; as in 275 below.

262. *Bias.* Natural tendency. The metaphor is taken from the game of bowls, the *bias* being a weight in one side of the bowl, affecting its motion. It is a common figure in S. Cf. *L. L. L.* iv. 2. 113, *K. John*, ii. 1. 574, *Lear*, i. 2. 120 ("bias of nature"), *Ham.* ii. 1. 65, etc.

263. *Contracted.* This word, like the *betrothed* in 255, confirms the explanation given in the note on iv. 3. 26 above. *Contract* is often used by S. with reference to the ceremony of betrothal (as in

W. T. iv. 4. 401, v. 3. 5, *M. for M.* v. 1. 380, *Lear*, v. 3. 228, etc.), but never to that of marriage.

266. *Right noble*, etc. "Not only is there the pleasant effect produced in these few words of Orsino's coming forward to avouch the nobility of his old friend's son and daughter, but they serve the dramatic purpose of attesting the gentle birth of the youth who is chosen by a countess for a husband, and of the maiden who is about to be taken by the duke for a wife" (Clarke).

267. *As yet the glass*, etc. *As yet* = still; as in *L. C.* 75; "I might as yet have been a spreading flower," etc. *The glass* seems to refer to the *perspective* of 219 above.

271. *Over-swear.* Swear over again. Cf. *swear over* = swear down, in *W. T.* i. 2. 424.

273. *That orbed continent.* The sun. Cf. *Ham.* iii. 2. 166: "Tellus' orbed ground." *Continent* = that which contains (as in *M. N. D.* ii. 1. 92, *Lear*, iii. 2. 58, etc.), here applied to the sun as the seat and source of light. *Keeps* is understood after *continent.*

278. *At Malvolio's suit.* There is no hint of this elsewhere in the play (cf. note on ii. 1. 17), and it may be inserted merely to give occasion for referring to Malvolio at this point. In 256 just above, Viola implies that there is nothing to prevent her taking Sebastian at once to the captain.

280. *Enlarge.* Release, set at liberty; as in *Hen. V.* ii. 2. 40, 57, etc.

281. *Remember me.* For the reflexive use, cf. 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 68: "and now, I remember me, his name is Falstaff," etc.

282. *Distract.* For the form of the participle, cf. *J. C.* iv. 3. 155: "she fell distract"; *Ham.* iv. 5. 2: "She is importunate, indeed distract," etc.

283. *Extracting.* "Drawing other thoughts from my mind" (Schmidt). The later folios have "exacting" (which may be what S. wrote), and Hanmer substituted "distracting." Clarke remarks: "There is a playful and bewitching effect in Olivia's change of the first syllable of the slightly varying word, with, mayhap, a half-

smiling, half-tender emphasis in her tone, and a momentary glance towards her new-trothed husband, as she utters the significant conclusion."

286. *At the stave's end.* Cf. Withals, *Dict.*: "To hold off, keepe aloofe, as they say, at the stave's ende." *Belzebub* is an old spelling.

288. *He has.* The folio has simply "has" (as in 198 above), which may be right, such ellipsis of the pronoun being common.

290. *Skills.* Matters, signifies. Cf. *T. of S.* iii. 2. 134: "It skills not much," etc.

299. *Vox.* Voice; that is, loud voice, which he thinks in keeping with a madman's letter.

302. *Perpend.* Consider, look to it; a word used only by Pistol, Polonius, and the Clowns (Schmidt). Cf. *M. W.* ii. 1. 119, *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 69, etc.

307. *Cousin.* Changed by Rowe to "uncle"; but cf. i. 3. 5 above, where it is used in close connection with Toby's "niece," which is the only ground for considering Toby to be Olivia's uncle. But *cousin* was used very loosely by S., being applied to nephew, niece, brother-in-law, and grandchild, and also as a mere complimentary form of address between princes, etc.

312. *My duty.* "An allusion to the subscription of duty at the end of letters to a superior" (Deighton).

318. *Deliver'd.* Released, set free; as in iv. 2. 72 above.

320. *A sister.* "The manner in which Olivia is made to take cognizance of her mistaken Cesario is both proper and delicate; intimating that she would have more than a sister's love for her from remembrance of what had passed" (Clarke).

321. *Alliance on 't.* In *on 't*, the *on* = of, and the *it* is used in an indefinite way, referring to the idea implied in what precedes. Cf. 2 *Hen. IV.* iii. 2. 270: "grow till you come unto it"; *A. and C.* iii. 13. 176: "There 's hope in 't yet" (cf. 192 just below), etc.

322. *Proper.* Own, personal; as often. Cf. *Temp.* iii. 3. 60: "their proper selves," etc.

323. *Apt.* Ready; as in 133 above. Cf. *L. L. L.* iv. 3. 114: "Youth so apt to pluck a sweet," etc.

324. *Quits.* Releases. It is often = acquit, absolve; as in *A. Y. L.* iii. 1. 11, *Hen. V.* ii. 2. 166, etc.

325. *Mettle.* Disposition. See on ii. 5. 15 above.

332. *Notorious.* Notable, egregious. Cf. *notoriously* in 366 below.

335. *From it.* See on i. 5. 195 above.

342. *Lighter.* "Of less dignity or importance" (Johnson).

346. *Geck.* Dupe; used by S. only here and in *Cymb.* v. 4. 67: —

> "And to become the geck and scorn
> O' th' other's villany."

351. *I do bethink me.* I recollect; as in *M. N. D.* iv. 1. 155, *Oth.* v. 2. 25, etc.

352. *Then.* Changed by some editors to "thou"; but the ellipsis is a common one.

353. *Such . . . which.* Cf. *W. T.* i. 1. 26: "Such an affection which," etc. *Presuppos'd upon thee* = "previously pointed out for thy imitation, or such as it was supposed thou wouldst assume after reading the letter" (Steevens).

355. *Practice.* Trick, or plot; as often. *Shrewdly* = sharply, keenly; as in *Ham.* i. 4. 1: "The air bites shrewdly," etc. For *pass upon*, cf. iii. 1. 44 above.

364. *Upon.* In consequence of. Cf. *Much Ado*, iv. 1. 225: "she died upon his words"; *Id.* v. 1. 258: "And fled he is upon this villany," etc.

365. *Against.* "In opposition or repugnance to" (Schmidt).

366. *Importance.* Importunity; as in *K. John*, ii. 1. 7: "At our importance hither is he come." So *important* = importunate, in *Much Ado*, ii. 1. 74, *Lear*, iv. 4. 26, etc. Daniel remarks here: "Now Maria writ the letter at the 'importance' of her own love of mischief; the plot originated entirely with her, though Sir Toby and the rest eagerly joined in it."

369. *Pluck on.* Excite. Cf. *M. for M.* ii. 4. 147: "To pluck on others"; *Rich. III.* iv. 2. 65: "sin will pluck on sin." *Pluck* is a favourite word with S.

370. *If that.* See on i. 2. 48 above.

372. *Poor fool.* For the use of *fool* as a term of endearment or pity, cf. *Much Ado*, ii. 1. 326, *Lear*, v. 3. 305, etc. *Baffled* = treated contemptuously; as in *Rich. II.* i. 1. 170, etc.

374. *Thrown.* Theobald changed this to "thrust," the word in the letter, ii. 5. 157 above; but the variation may have been purposely introduced by the poet, "possibly from his knowing, by professional experience, the difficulty of quoting with perfect accuracy" (Staunton). It is more probable, however, that it was due to the carelessness in these little matters of which we find so many illustrations in the plays. Wright refers to an instance in *A. W.* (v. 3. 13) where in *reading* a letter the original (as given in iii. 2. 21 fol.) is materially varied from. See also on ii. 5. 92 above; and cf. notes on i. 4. 3 and ii. 5. 212.

379. *Whirligig.* Properly a top; like *gig* in *L. L. L.* iv. 3. 167 and v. 1. 70.

384. *He hath not told us*, etc. "In this line and the preceding we have true Shakespearian touches. First, we have the Duke, with his gentle nature and his new joy, eager to have the injured though crabbed purist brought back and soothed into partaking of the general harmony; and then we have the indication of Orsino's naturally keen interest respecting *the Captain* who had saved Viola, while it also serves the dramatic purpose of showing that the promise of interrogating the Captain in reference to *Malvolio's suit* has not been lost sight of, although the interest of the play's last scene does not require that point to be further pursued" (Clarke).

385. *Convents.* Is convenient, suits; or, possibly, as others explain it = invites. Elsewhere (in *M. for M.* v. 1. 158, *Hen. VIII.* v. 1. 52, and *Cor.* ii. 2. 58) it is = calls together, summons.

391. *Fancy's.* Love's. Cf. i. 1. 14 and ii. 4. 33 above.

393. *When that*, etc. Staunton remarks: "It is to be regretted,

perhaps, that this 'nonsensical ditty,' as Steevens terms it, has not long since been degraded to the foot-notes. It was evidently one of those jigs with which it was the rude custom of the Clown to gratify the groundlings [*Ham.* iii. 2. 12] upon the conclusion of a play. These absurd compositions, intended only as a vehicle for buffoonery, were usually improvisations of the singer, tagged to some popular ballad-burden, or the first lines of various songs strung together in ludicrous juxtaposition, at the end of each of which the performer indulged in hideous grimace and a grotesque sort of 'Jump Jim Crow' dance." The editors and commentators generally agree with Staunton and Steevens. Knight, on the other hand, says: "We hold the Clown's epilogue song to be the most philosophical clown's song upon record; and a treatise might be written upon its wisdom. It is the history of a life, from the condition of 'a little tiny boy,' through 'man's estate,' to decaying age — 'when I came into my bed'; and the conclusion is, that what is true of the individual is true of the species, and what was of yesterday was of generations long passed away — for —

'A great while ago the world begun.'"

Mr. John Weiss also says: "When the play is over . . . Feste is left alone on the stage. Then he sings a song which conveys to us his feeling of the world's impartiality; all things proceed according to law; nobody is humoured; people must abide the consequences of their actions, 'for the rain it raineth every day.' . . . The grave insinuation of this song is touched with the vague soft bloom of the play. . . . How gracious has Shakespeare been to mankind in this play! He could not do otherwise than leave Feste all alone to pronounce its benediction." Furness, after quoting this, adds: "It is delightful to find a reader, since Knight, on whom the charm of this song is not lost."

In *Lear* (iii. 2. 74 fol.) the Fool sings this stanza of a song: —

"He that has and a little tiny wit,
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,

Must make content with his fortunes fit,
For the rain it raineth every day."

Furness thinks that this may have been the same song as in the present play, "but changed by the Fool to suit the occasion." On the other hand, it might be suggested that the occurrence of the same song in two plays perhaps tells against the theory that it is Shakespeare's, whether it is worthy of him or not.

And a little, etc. *And* is often used as an expletive in popular songs. Cf. *Oth.* ii. 3. 92: "King Stephen was and a worthy peer" (1st quarto and most modern eds. omit "and").

401. *Wive.* For the verb, cf. *M. of V.* ii. 9. 83, *Oth.* iii. 4. 64, etc.

APPENDIX

Comments on Some of the Characters

Viola. — Viola is not only one of the loveliest of Shakespeare's heroines, but she surpasses them all in the unselfishness of her love; or, since true love is always unselfish, we will say that her unselfishness is subjected to severer tests than that of any other of these heroines, and never fails in the ordeal. As another puts it, "in her we see the full beauty and pathos of faithful self-abnegation." She not only cannot tell her love, but she is compelled to be the messenger and advocate of the man she loves in secret to another woman; and she discharges the unwelcome duty with absolute loyalty. When Olivia refuses to see her, she might have escaped the painful task, but she persists in gaining admittance to the lady, and urges her master's suit as earnestly as if it had been her own.

When Olivia resorts to the trick of sending the ring after her by Malvolio, her conduct is marked by equal presence of mind and delicate regard for the reputation of the Countess. Some of the critics (see note on ii. 2. 12) have failed to appreciate this, and have changed the text from "She took the ring of me" to "She took no ring of me," which is what most women would have said, but which would have betrayed the trick to Malvolio. Viola, who is quick to perceive that Olivia has given him the message that he may not suspect her motive in sending the ring, accepts the false version as true in order to screen the lady from the consequences of her stratagem. She tells a falsehood to prevent the detection of Olivia's falsehood, and gives the Duke no hint of it, though it might have been the means of disenchanting him.

Julia, in the *Two Gentlemen of Verona*, is sent with a message of love to Sylvia by the faithless Proteus, but she is not enjoined to urge his suit, but merely to give Sylvia a ring and ask for the picture the lady had promised to Proteus to get rid of his importunities. Julia discharges the duty, but takes the opportunity of referring indirectly to her own claims upon the false lover, thus damaging his prospect of gaining his suit and winning for herself the sympathy of Sylvia. Her task is easy compared with that of Viola, but she does not perform it with the same forgetfulness of her own interests.

Viola's position is the more trying from the fact that she has no confidant as Julia and Rosalind have. She "never tells her love" — she cannot tell it, as Olivia does, though she can be eloquent in describing it as the love of another while pleading for the Duke with the Countess, and in hinting of it to him in the pathetic story of her fictitious sister.

When Olivia tells Viola (Cesario) that she loves her (him), the girl, though she sees the ludicrous side of the avowal, does not treat the deluded lady as Rosalind, in a similar position, treats Phebe. To be sure, the Countess is a very different person from the pert little shepherdess, and this naturally affects the bearing of Viola towards her; but, though Olivia has scorned the love of the Duke as Phebe has scorned that of Silvius, Viola does not refer to that fact at all, but merely continues to urge the suit of her master, after assuring the lady that her own suit is hopeless. She pities Olivia, as she tells her, but does not laugh at her.

Shakespeare often puts his heroines into male apparel, but they assume it for various reasons and behave differently in it. Viola is driven to adopt it by the necessities of her situation. Shipwrecked on the coast of a strange land, she can think of no shelter except in the court of the Duke, about whom she has heard, but as he is a bachelor she cannot seek service there unless her sex is disguised. Rosalind and Portia play the part of young men with no hesitation when it answers their purposes, and recognize the humorous aspect

of the transformation from the first. Rosalind, whatever "hidden woman's fear" may be in her heart, will "have a swashing and a martial outside,"

> "As many other mannish cowards have
> That do outface it with their semblances."

Portia will walk and talk "like a fine bragging youth," and practise "a thousand raw tricks" of such fellows. Julia will attire herself as a "well-reputed page," knit up her hair in silken strings "with twenty odd-conceited true-love knots," and go boldly from Verona to Milan in pursuit of her good-for-nothing lover, though at the time she does not suspect his perfidy and plans the journey only because she longs to see him. Imogen, when she gets the message from her husband to meet him at Milford Haven, decides to start at once with the faithful Pisanio, and when he leaves her after she has read the letter of Posthumus urging her murder, she follows the advice of Pisanio and puts on the male attire which he has provided in anticipation of the emergency. Like Viola, she does it under the pressure of necessity, though of a far more painful character, but she wears the unfamiliar dress with no apparent embarrassment.

But Viola is never quite at ease in her disguise. She finds no pleasure or amusement in it like Rosalind and Portia. This is shown by her occasional allusions to it, and her hints that she is not what she seems — hints that show her self-consciousness rather than any fear or suspicion that the disguise will be detected or suspected. When she finds that Olivia is in love with her, she half reproaches herself for the part she is playing, though driven to it in self-defence:

> "Disguise, I see thou art a wickedness
> Wherein the pregnant enemy does much."

She feels that she is in a predicament out of which she can see no escape at present. She recognizes the humorous side of it, but finds no amusement in it, her pity for Olivia being the predominant feeling: —

"How will this fadge? my master loves her dearly;
And I, poor monster, fond as much on him;
And she, mistaken, seems to dote on me.
What will become of this? As I am man,
My state is desperate for my master's love;
As I am woman, — now alas the day! —
What thriftless sighs shall poor Olivia breathe!
O time! thou must untangle this, not I;
It is too hard a knot for me to untie!"

Even more trying and perplexing is the position in which she finds herself when the duel with Sir Andrew is impending and she is led to believe that he is a formidable antagonist. Her instinctive timidity and his natural though ridiculous cowardice are most laughably set forth; and we who are in the secret are almost sorry when Antonio interposes and puts a stop to the threatened passage at arms. We cannot help feeling a curiosity to see which would prove the better *man* of the two. It is not impossible that, in sheer desperation, the maiden might have assumed a semblance of valour that would have driven the pusillanimous knight from the field.

Viola is not lacking in true courage when love draws it forth. When the Duke, confounding her with her brother, believes that she has treacherously gained the heart and hand of Olivia and threatens her with death, she offers her bosom to the knife and cries: —

"And I most jocund, apt, and willingly,
To do you rest, a thousand deaths would die!"

But a happy life with the man she has loved in secret, not a dreadful death at his hands, is to be her destiny. The intricacies of the plot are unravelled, and when Orsino, recalling her hints at her concealed passion, now finds that she is a woman, and says, —

"Boy, thou hast said to me a thousand times
Thou never shouldst love woman like to me, —"

we know that she can tell her love at last, and that she means all that she speaks when she turns to him and exclaims: —

> "And all those sayings will I over-swear,
> And all those swearings keep as true in soul
> As doth that orbed continent the fire
> That severs day from night."

ORSINO. — One might feel some doubt at first whether the Duke was quite worthy of Viola, and the transfer of his devotion from Olivia to her may seem unnaturally sudden. But Shakespeare has really prepared the way for it. The Duke, as the poet has taken pains to show by many little touches, is greatly attracted by his new page, so much so that others in the court notice it almost from the first. Valentine says to Viola (i. 4. 1): "If the duke continue these favours towards you, Cesario, you are like to be much advanced; he hath known you but three days, and already you are no stranger." Orsino indicates his feeling toward the supposed boy by the confidence he reposes in him, and by the affectionate tone he soon adopts in speaking to him. "Good youth," "good Cesario," "dear lad," and the like, are the terms in which he addresses him. The page's talk about love has perhaps as much to do with the affection he inspires as his pleasing personality. "Thou dost speak masterly," the Duke declares, and he suspects at once that the youth must have been in love himself.

Besides, Orsino is not so much in love as he imagines he is. He reminds us of Romeo, in the salad days of his love for Rosaline. Young men of that romantic and sentimental type fancy that they are in love — sometimes again and again — before a genuine passion takes possession of them. As Rosalind expresses it, Cupid may have clapped them on the shoulder, but they are really heart-whole. They are capable of love, have a longing for love, and are apt to become enamoured of the first attractive young woman that comes in their way. Such love is like that of the Song in the *Merchant of Venice*: —

"It is engender'd in the eyes,
By gazing fed, and fancy dies
In the cradle where it lies."

It lives only until it is displaced by a healthier, more vigorous love, capable of outliving the precarious period of infancy.

The Duke himself seems at times to be aware of the nature of his passion, or of similar instances in other people. He tells Viola, supposing her to be of his own sex:—

"For, boy, however we do praise ourselves,
Our fancies are more giddy and unfirm,
More longing, wavering, sooner lost and worn,
Than women's are;"

and in his next speech he says that unless the woman is younger than the man, his affection "cannot hold the bent"—that is, retain its tension or strength—because feminine beauty in that case will the sooner fade:—

"For women are as roses, whose fair flower,
Being once display'd, doth fall that very hour."

The unspoken inference is that the man's love will not outlast the faded bloom of beauty.

A moment afterwards, when Viola, who with feminine insight may have a notion of the instability of his love, hints at the possibility of his getting over it, as a woman would have to do if he could not love her, he contradicts what he has just said, declaring that

"There is no woman's sides
Can bide the beating of so strong a passion
As love doth give my heart, no woman's heart
So big to hold so much. . . .
Make no compare
Between that love a woman can bear me
And that I owe Olivia."

But this rhapsodical passion is a lazy languorous one after all. It does not drive him, as it would if it were the overmastering love

he imagines it to be, to press his suit in person, despite the lady's resolution to shut herself up in solitary grief for the loss of her brother. He does his wooing by proxy, like Claudio in *Much Ado*, whose love is of the same weak sentimental sort. Viola herself indirectly reproves him for this lack of spirit in his love-making when she tells Olivia that, were she the wooer, she would not take any second-hand denial from the lady: —

> "In your denial I would find no sense;
> I would not understand it."

Olivia asks: —

> "Why, what would you?"

and Viola replies: —

> "Make me a willow cabin at your gate,
> And call upon my soul within the house;
> Write loyal cantons of contemned love,
> And sing them loud even in the dead of night;
> Halloo your name to the reverberate hills,
> And make the babbling gossip of the air
> Cry out Olivia! O, you should not rest
> Between the elements of air and earth
> But you should pity me!"

When at last — in the final scene of the play — Orsino meets Olivia face to face, and she checks him as he begins to plead his case in person, he asks: "Still so cruel?" "Still so constant," she replies; and when he, after complaining of her perversity and ingratitude in rejecting him, weakly asks, "What shall I do?" she answers: "Even what it please my lord, that shall become him." Then he gets angry and threatens both her and Cesario, whom he suspects her of loving, with death. This is quite consistent with the sentimental selfishness of his feeling for Olivia. There is nothing of the true lover in it. It is the petulant wrath

of the child that cannot have its way. Compare what Shakespeare says in the 116th *Sonnet:* —

> "Love is not love
> Which alters when it alteration finds,
> Or bends with the remover to remove.
> O, no! it is an ever fixed mark,
> That looks on tempests and is never shaken;
> It is the star to every wandering bark,
> Whose worth 's unknown, although his height be taken.
> Love 's not Time's fool, though rosy lips and cheeks
> Within his bending sickle's compass come;
> Love alters not with his brief hours and weeks,
> But bears it out even to the edge of doom."

Love that *is* love indeed alters not with disappointment or separation or the lapse of time, but endures "even to the edge of doom."

The appearance of Sebastian and the disclosure of the sex of Viola save both her and Olivia from the fate threatened by Orsino, who promptly transfers his affections to the maiden for whom he has had a kindly feeling in her disguise. Let us not say, however, that he transfers to her the kind of affection that he had for the Countess. We will hope that it is the true love of which that sentimental fancy was but the poor semblance; or, if it is not such at the moment, that it will grow to be such — and what we know of Viola assures us that this will inevitably come to pass. And the Duke is not a bad match for the lovely and loving Viola. Olivia, though she could not return his love, said of him: —

> "Yet I suppose him virtuous, know him noble,
> Of great estate, of fresh and stainless youth;
> In voices well divulg'd, free, learn'd, and valiant;
> And in dimension and the shape of nature
> A gracious person."

We will believe that "they lived happily ever after," and that the Countess was equally fortunate in the exchange of Cesario for Sebastian.

MARIA. — Maria is unrivalled in her way among Shakespeare's women. So much mischief, fun, and vivacity were never before or since put into one little body. If she had not been a diminutive sprite-like personage, she could never have been so alert and active in mischief. Her *petite* frame is packed full of merriment and sportiveness. She is like Puck in petticoats, and like Puck she would say: —

> "And those things do best please me
> That befall preposterously."

Not a person in the house or that comes into the house escapes the attacks of her wit and waggery. When Viola comes disguised as the Duke's page, and Olivia is inclined to dismiss her briefly, Maria, ever on the watch for a chance to give somebody a rap, chimes in with "Will you hoist sail, sir? here lies your way;" but Viola, who is not without wit, though she seldom has opportunity in the play to show it, is here a match for her pert assailant, and promptly retorts the nautical impudence in the same figurative fashion, "No, good swabber, I am to hull here a little longer." Before Maria recovers sufficiently from the sharp repartee to strike back, the Countess sends her from the room.

Maria does not spare her companions in mischief. She berates them for their "caterwauling," as she calls it, though, when Malvolio comes in and joins in the attack, she turns from them to assail him, and when he goes out bids him "go shake his ears." All the subsequent plot against Malvolio is of her devising, and with what zest she follows it up! She is as ready to join in a practical joke started by others as to carry out one of her own concocting. When Toby and Fabian are urging Sir Andrew to challenge Viola, she zealously seconds them. And she enjoys it all so much that she becomes utterly merciless in pursuing it. When

the others are disposed to think that the joke has been carried far enough, she will not hear of its being given up. Fabian says when they are tormenting Malvolio, "Why, we shall make him mad indeed." "The house will be the quieter" is her only reply. The Clown is the only one who is a match for her, but perhaps this is due to the fact that he knows her liking for Toby, about which she does not fancy being joked. In the end Toby marries her, but we cannot imagine that he ever became her master.

Sir Toby and Sir Andrew. — Toby, as some of the critics have noted, has a certain resemblance to Falstaff, but it is to the fat knight in his decadence. He has Falstaff's love for a practical joke, and his unscrupulousness in getting money from his friends by humouring their weaknesses. He "bleeds" Sir Andrew without mercy, fooling him with hopes of winning the hand of Olivia, much as Iago does Roderigo. It may seem at first to be in a meaner way than Iago's, for Olivia is his kinswoman, and he is enjoying her hospitality at the time; but we must not imagine that he believes Andrew could ever succeed in his suit.

Andrew is an unmitigated fool from first to last. He never says or does a sensible thing. All his talk is marked by a plentiful lack of wit, and much of it is a stupid echoing of Toby, for whom he has a boobyish admiration. When Toby says of Maria that she "adores" him, Andrew follows with "I was adored once too," catching at the word with the senseless iteration of the parrot. Toby says, "I could marry this wench for this device." "So could I too" is the echo. "And ask no other dowry with her than such another joke," says Toby. "Nor I neither" chimes in Andrew; and so the antiphony goes on.

There is a touch of humour in the innocent readiness with which Andrew refers to his reputation as both knave and fool. In the noisy carousal at night he proposes that they sing the catch called "Thou knave." The fool says, "I shall be constrained in 't to call thee knave, knight." "'T is not the first time I have constrained one to call me knave" is the reply. Later, he and his

friends are overhearing Malvolio as he rehearses in the garden what he means to say to Toby : "Besides, you waste the treasure of your time with a foolish knight." "That 's me, I warrant you," Andrew says to his companions. "One Sir Andrew," continues Malvolio ; and the knight cries, "I knew 't was I, for many do call me fool!"

MALVOLIO. — From the first Malvolio was a favourite character on the stage. In the earliest known reference to the play, in the manuscript *Diary* of John Manningham, the trick played upon the steward is the chief feature mentioned ; and Leonard Digges, in the verses prefixed to the edition of Shakespeare's *Poems* printed in 1640, alludes to the character, in connection with Falstaff, Benedick, and Beatrice, as attracting crowds to the theatre : —

> "lo, in a trice
> The cockpit, galleries, boxes, all are full
> To hear *Malvolio*, that cross-garter'd Gull."

Malvolio, however, has been often misunderstood, not only by the average reader of the play, but by critics and commentators. The stage tradition of former days made him a "low comedy" character ; an idea against which Charles Lamb protested, declaring that the steward was not essentially ludicrous, and that an air of dignity should be thrown about the part : "He might have worn his gold chain with honour in one of our old Roundhead families, in the service of a Lambert or a Lady Fairfax." He is the trusted and valued steward of Olivia, who is seriously troubled when she is led to suspect that he is apparently becoming insane. He is no fool except so far as his inordinate self-conceit makes him so ; and upon this weakness the conspirators base their plot against him. The high opinion his mistress has of him, and the favour which on this account she has shown him, prepare the way for his falling into the trap set for him.

In ii. 3. 151 Maria says of Malvolio, "Marry, sometimes he is a kind of Puritan." From this it has been assumed by some of the

editors that the steward was a Puritan, and they have quoted his "cross-gartering" as being a Puritan fashion. Steevens cites Barton Holyday (1593–1666) : —

> "Had there appear'd some sharp cross-garter'd man,
> Whom their loud laugh might nickname Puritan."

But Maria does not call Malvolio a Puritan; she simply says that "*sometimes* he is *a kind of* Puritan"; that is, he has something of the ways and manners of the Puritans. Like them he is indifferent to "cakes and ale," and takes life very seriously. When Sir Andrew understands her to mean that the steward really is a Puritan, she corrects him: "The devil a Puritan that he is, or anything *constantly* but a time-pleaser," etc.

Malvolio at no time talks like a Puritan, as he would naturally have done if he had been one when he came in to reprove the midnight roysterers (ii. 3). It is the noise and disturbance they are making at that unseasonable hour for which he reproaches them, not the sin of their drunken revelry, against which a Puritan would have inveighed. Falstaff was a better Puritan when he played the part of one at the Boar's Head (1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 421 fol.) and lectured Prince Hal on his profligate habits.

As to the cross-gartering, Halliwell-Phillipps remarks: "In Shakespeare's time the fashion was yet in credit, and Olivia's detestation of it arose, we may suppose, from thinking it coxcombical. . . . But when Barton Holyday wrote [toward the middle of the seventeenth century], the fashion was exploded, and was retained only by Puritans and old men." He cites, among other illustrations of this, Ford, *Lover's Melancholy* (1629): "As rare an old gentleman as ever walk'd cross-garter'd."

Feste. — The Clown is one of the best of Shakespeare's professional fools, no two of whom are alike in all respects. They have as distinct an individuality as his more serious and more important characters. One of the notable peculiarities of Feste is the vein of sentiment which appears in him at times. He is a singer, and his

repertory is not confined to comic songs, but includes lyrics of love and death, like the one, "Come away, come away, death," of which the Duke was so fond — "that old and antique song" which suited his mood better than "light airs and recollected tunes of these most brisk and giddy-paced times," and which Feste could render with so much feeling that Viola says of it: —

> "It gives a very echo to the seat
> Where Love is thron'd."

There is, moreover, much wisdom in his foolery on occasion; as when Toby comes in drunk and Olivia asks, "What's a drunken man like, fool?" and Feste replies: "Like a drowned man, a fool, and a madman. One draught above heat makes him a fool; the second mads him; and a third drowns him."

He can criticise his own punning and quibbling; as when, after joking in that way with Viola, he says: "To see this age! A sentence is but a cheveril glove to a good wit; how quickly the wrong side may be turned outward!" and in the same scene when he says: "Who you are and what you would are not of my welkin — I might say element, but the word is over-worn." Shakespeare is fond of satirizing the affectations in the language of his day, but he generally does it through serious characters; as when Hamlet and Horatio ridicule Osric's fine talk, or when Lorenzo comments on Launcelot's word-twisting (*M. of V.* iii. 5. 70 fol.), comparing it with that of "fools that stand in better place [of higher social rank] who for a tricksy word defy the matter" — sacrificing the sense for the sake of a quibble. So when Sebastian says to Feste, "I prithee, vent thy folly somewhere else," the Clown catches at the word *vent:* "Vent my folly! he has heard that word of some great man, and now applies it to a fool. Vent my folly! I am afraid this great lubber, the world, will prove a cockney."

He is shrewd to see the weaknesses of his superiors in rank. He knows that Toby is a fool indeed — he "has a most weak *pia mater*." He can slyly reprove Olivia's excessive mourning for her

brother who is "in heaven." He understands the fickle vagaries of the Duke, to whom he says: "Now the melancholy god protect thee; and the tailor make thy doublet of changeable taffeta, for thy mind is a very opal! — I would have men of such constancy put to sea, that their business might be every thing and their intent every where; for that 's it that always makes a good voyage of nothing." He can play the part of the parson, Sir Topas, quoting Latin and Scripture, and catechizing the imprisoned Malvolio on the Pythagorean doctrine of metempsychosis — in short, as he says, he is "for all waters," equal to any demand, dramatic, musical, or other, that may be made upon him. He is the most versatile of fools, a favourite with everybody in the play except the sour Malvolio, and with every reader of the play, unless he be like Malvolio, incapable of appreciating the mingled wit and wisdom of such foolery as Feste's.

The Time-Analysis of the Play

As Mr. P. A. Daniel shows in his paper "On the Times or Durations of the Action of Shakspere's Plays" (see on i. 4. 3 above), the action of this play occupies three days, with an interval of three days between the first and second.

The events of the first three scenes may all be supposed to take place in one day. In i. 4. 3, Valentine says "he hath known you *but three days*" (see note thereupon), which shows that time to have elapsed since i. 3. The remaining scenes of act i., with the first three of act ii., occur on this second day, at the close of which (ii. 3. 204) Sir Toby and Sir Andrew go off to "burn some sack," as it is "too late to go to bed." In ii. 4. 3, the Duke asks for the song "we heard *last night*," which indicates that only one night has intervened; and the rest of the play furnishes matter for but a single "May morning" (iii. 4. 152). It is difficult to understand when Sir Toby and Maria found time to be married, as the bride-

groom has left the stage in the very same scene, drunk and with a broken head. But Biondello tells us in *T. of S.* (iv. 4. 99), "I knew a wench married in an afternoon as she went to the garden for parsley to stuff a rabbit"; and possibly Sir Toby snatched a spare moment for an impromptu wedding, and so crammed more matter into this busy May morning. Maria had evidently been manœuvring for the match all along, and would willingly "be married under a bush like a beggar" (*A. Y. L.* iii. 3. 85) rather than run the risk of delay.

List of Characters in the Play

The numbers in parentheses indicate the lines the characters have in each scene.

Duke: i. 1(31), 4(27); ii. 4(69); v. 1(94). Whole no. 221.

Sebastian: ii. 1(36); iii. 3(20); iv. 1(17), 3(23); v. 1(32). Whole no. 128.

Antonio: ii. 1(13); iii. 3(33), 4(33); v. 1(28). Whole no. 107.

Captain: i. 2(32). Whole no. 32.

Valentine: i. 1(9), 4(5). Whole no. 14.

Curio: i. 1(2); ii. 4(5). Whole no. 7.

Sir Toby: i. 3(67), 5(7); ii. 3(63), 5(44); iii. 1(7), 2(36), 4(144); iv. 1(10), 2(13); v. 1(7). Whole no. 398.

Sir Andrew: i. 3(53); ii. 3(51), 5(15); iii. 1(7), 2(12), 4(18); iv. 1(7); v. 1(20). Whole no. 183.

Malvolio: i. 5(35); ii. 2(14), 3(20), 5(115); iii. 4(58); iv. 2(45); v. 1(19). Whole no. 306.

Fabian: ii. 5(33); iii. 2(25), 4(40); v. 1(30). Whole no. 128.

Clown: i. 5(66); ii. 3(33), 4(29); iii. 1(42); iv. 1(20), 2(77); v. 1(77). Whole no. 344.

Priest: v. 1(8). Whole no. 8.

1st Officer: iii. 4(6); v. 1(6). Whole no. 12.

2d Officer: iii. 4(4). Whole no. 4.

Servant: iii. 4(4). Whole no. 4.

Olivia: i. 5(127); iii. 1(54), 4(45); iv. 1(16), 3(12); v. 1(67). Whole no. 321.

Viola: i. 2(34), 4(13), 5(75); ii. 2(28), 4(32); iii. 1(69), 4(56); v. 1(46). Whole no. 353.

Maria: i. 3(31), 5(25); ii. 3(41), 5(20); iii. 2(17), 4(29); iv. 2(6). Whole no. 169.

In the above enumeration, parts of lines are counted as whole lines, making the total in the play greater than it is. The actual number of lines in each scene (Globe edition numbering) is as follows: i. 1(41), 2(64), 3(151), 4(42), 5(330); ii. 1(49), 2(42), 3(208), 4(127), 5(227); iii. 1(176), 2(90), 3(49), 4(433); iv. 1(69), 2(141), 3(35); v. 1(418). Whole no. in the play, 2692.

INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES EXPLAINED

a (omitted), 184
abatement, 143
above heat, 158
abuse (= deceive), 189
access (accent), 154
accost, 150
Actæon, 143
adheres (= coheres), 196
admire (= wonder), 197
adorations (five syllables), 164
advance (= raise), 181
advantage (verb), 207
affectioned, 175
against, 221
agone (= ago), 216
allow (= prove), 148
allowed, 157
alone, 143, 162
am I made? 195
an (= one), 166
anatomy, 192
and (expletive), 224
anothergates, 216
antique, 176
apt (= ready), 221
aqua-vitæ, 186
argument (= proof), 191
Arion, 146
as (omitted), 167, 179
as much to say as, 157
aspect (accent), 154
ass (play upon), 175
as yet (= still), 219
attend (= attend to), 154
attend (= wait for), 199
at the stave's end, 220
at this throw, 210
ayword, 174

back-trick, 152
baffled, 222
baited, 189
barful, 155
barren (= dull), 157
bawbling, 211
bawcock, 197
bay-windows, 205
beagle, 175
bear-baiting, 151, 189
bed of Ware, the, 192
beef, 151
before me, 175
belike, 195, 199
bent, 177
beseech you, 189
beshrew, 172, 204
besides (preposition), 206
bespake you fair, 216
bethink me, 221
betrothing, 214
bias, 218
bibble babble, 207
bird-bolts, 157
blazon, 165
blent, 163
bloody argument, 195
blows (= puffs up), 182
board (verb), 150
bonds (play upon), 187
bonos dies, 205
botched up, 204
botcher, 156
bottom (= vessel), 211
brabble, 211
branched (velvet), 182
breach (= breaking), 166
breast (= voice), 169
breath (= voice), 171
bred (= begotten), 146
brock, 184
broke my head, 215
Brownist, 191
bum-baily, 198
burn some sack, 176
but (= than), 154
buttery-bar, 150
by (= hard by), 208
by (play upon), 187
by and by (= presently), 198
by th' ears, 183

C's, etc., 183
canary, 150
Candy, 211
cantons, 164
caper (play upon), 152
carpet consideration, 199
case (= skin), 214
Castiliano vulgo, 150
Cataian, 172
catch (noun), 169
caught with tickling, 180
celebration, 208
champaign, 186
chantry, 208
check (in falconry), 184, 188
cherry-pit, 197
cheveril, 187
civil, 195
clear-stores, 205
cloistress, 144
close in, 148
cloyment, 179
cockatrice, 198
codling, 159
collier (= devil), 197
comedian, 160
come near me, 196
come to note, 209
comfortable, 163
commerce, 198
commodity, 188
compact (accent), 214

compare (noun), 179
competitors, 205
complexion, 176, 181
comptible, 160
conceit (verb), 200
conclusions to be as kisses, 209
conduct (= escort), 199
consanguineous, 172
consequently, 196
cons state, 175
constant (= consistent), 205
conster, 188
continent (= container), 219
contract (= betrothal), 214, 218
contracted (= betrothed), 218
convents (verb), 222
coranto, 153
count (= duke), 146, 154
country (trisyllable), 146
county (= count), 165
couplet (= couple), 202
cousin, 220
coxcomb (= head), 215
coystril, 149
cozier, 173
credit, 207
Cressida, 188
cross-gartered, 185
crow, 157
crowner, 159
cruelty (concrete), 165, 178
crumbs (for cleaning gold chains), 174
cubiculo, 192
cucullus non facit monachum, 156
cunning, 163
curst, 191
cut (= curtal), 175
cypress, 177, 190

dally nicely, 187
day-bed, 182
deadly (= deathlike), 164
dear (dissyllable), 189
dear (= heartfelt), 212
decay (transitive), 157
deceivable, 208
dedication, 212
deeply in, 182
degree (= step), 190
delivered (= released), 220
delivered (= shown), 147
demure travel of regard, 182
denay, 180
deny (= refuse), 204
desperate of shame and state, 211
determinate, 166
dexteriously, 157
diluculo surgere, 169
dimension (= body), 164, 218
discourse (= reasoning), 208
dishonest, 156
dismount thy tuck, 199
disorders, 173
dispute (= argue), 208
dissemble, 204
distempered, 157
distract (= distracted), 219
distraction, 211
double-dealing, 216
do you rest, to, 213
draw the curtain, 163
draw three souls out of one weaver, 171
driving (= drifting), 146
dry (= sapless), 156
dry hand, 150
duello, by the, 201
duke (= count), 146

Egyptians in their fog, 205
Egyptian thief, the, 212
element (= sky), 143, 197
Elysium (= play upon?), 145
employment, 183
enchantment, 189
encounter, 189
endeavour thyself, 206
enlarge (= release), 219
entertainment, 162, 167
estimable wonder, 166
except before excepted, 148
expenses, 187
express myself, to, 166
expressure, 175
extent (= conduct), 204
extracting, 219
extravagancy, 166
eye-offending, 144
eyes had lost tongue, 167
eyes set, 216

fadge, 168
faithfull'st, 212
fall (= cadence), 139
fancy (= love), 143, 181, 222
fat (= heavy), 212
favour (= face), 159, 176, 201
fear no colours, 155
feature, 201
feelingly (= exactly), 175
fellow, 196
fertile tears, 164
Feste, 176
finder of madmen, 197
firago, 200
fire-new, 191
flame-coloured, 153
flatter with, 165
fleshed, 203
fond (= dote), 169
fool, 222
fools' zanies, 157
for (= because), 191
for all waters, 206
forbid not, 167
forgive (= excuse from), 161
formal, 184
fortunate-unhappy, 186
four elements, the, 169
fourteen years' purchase, 203
fraught (noun), 211
free (= careless), 177
fresh in murmur, 147
from (= away from), 161, 221
fruitless, 205
function, 214

gall (in ink), 192
galliard, 152
gaskins, 156
geck, 221
gentleness (= favour), 167
giant (ironical), 162
giddily, 178
gift of a grave, 149
ginger, 174
gives manhood approbation, 198
goes even (= agrees), 218

go hunt, 143
golden (= valuable), 208
golden shaft, 144
good life, 170
goodman devil, 207
good my mouse, 157
go shake your ears, 174
grace (= virtue), 210
gracious, 164
Greek (= jester), 203
grey eyes, 164
grise, 190
gust, 149

had rather, 170, 215
haggard (noun), 188
hale (verb), 192
happily (= haply), 206
hart (play upon), 143, 204
having (= property), 201
haviour, 198
heart (play upon), 143, 204
heat (= course), 143
hermit of Prague, the, 205
high fantastical, 143
his, 195
hob-nob, 199
hold acquaintance with, 146
honesty, 173
horrible (adverb), 198
hull (verb), 161
humour (= capriciousness), 154
humour of state, 182

I am dog, 171
idleness (= pastime), 157
impeticos thy gratillity, 170
importance (= importunity), 221
impressure, 184
incardinate, 215
incensement, 199
in contempt of question, 183
incredulous, 196
Indies, the, 194
indifferent (adverb), 164
in grain, 163
ingrateful, 212
in little, 196
in manners, 166
in my stars, 185
instance, 208
in standing water, 159
interchangement of rings, 214
into (= unto), 212
in voices well divulged, 165
is (with plural), 179, 184
it (indefinite), 220

jade me, 186
jealous, 208
jealousy, 194
jets (= struts), 181
jewel, 198
Jezebel, 181
joinder, 214
jump (= agree), 218

kickshawses, 151
King Gorboduc, 205

label, 164
lapsed, 195
late (adverb), 147
leasing, 158
leave to leave, 178
Legion, 197
leman, 170
lenten, 155
less (= inferior), 147
let (= hinder), 218
Lethe, 204
license of ink, 191
lie rich, 145
lies (= lodges), 187
life in it, 151
lighter, 221
limed, 196
list (= bound), 189
little (= a little), 215
lived upon the sea, 146
liver (seat of love, etc.), 179, 184, 191, 192
love-broker, 191
lullaby (verb), 210
lunacy, 161

M, O, A, I, 184
madonna, 156
maidenhead, 163
maidhood, 190
make the welkin dance, 171
malapert, 203
malignancy, 166
manikin, 192
manners (singular), 203
marble-breasted, 213
masterly (adverb), 176
maugre, 190
May morning, 197
me (ethical dative), 191
me (redundant), 148
meddle (= have to do), 199
mercies, 211
Messaline, 166, 218
metal of India, 180
mettle, 180, 221
midsummer madness, 196
minion, 213
miscarry, 196
misprision, 156
Mistress Mall's picture, 152
modest (= moderate), 148, 205
mollification, 162
monster, 169
mortal arbitrement, 200
motions (= emotions), 176
mouse, 157
music from the spheres, 189
mute (noun), 148
mutton and capers, 152

natural (play upon), 149, 172
nayword, 174
newly (= lately), 213
new map, the, 193
nine (eggs of wren), 192
nonpareil, 164
non-regardance, 213
nor never none, 191
north, the, 191
nor will not, 166
notable, 211
notorious, 221
numbers (= measure), 184

O (= cry of pain), 185
oath sake, 200
'Od's lifelings! 215
o'erflourished, 202
of (in adjurations), 218
of (= on), 186, 195
old age, the, 177
on (= of), 220
one self king, 145

opal, 178
open (adverb), 195
opposite (= opponent), 185, 192, 199
orb (= earth), 187
orbed continent, 219
othergates, 216
out (= out of pocket), 175
over-swear, 219
owe (= own), 166

Pandarus, 188
parish-top, 149
part (adverb), 201
participate, 218
part of death, 178
passages (= acts), 193
pass upon, 187
passy-measures pavin, 216
Patience (personified), 179
peascod, 159
pedant, 193
peevish, 165
Peg-a-Ramsey, 172
Penthesilea, 175
perchance, 145
perdy, 206
perfection (by marriage), 144, 165, 177
perfection (quadrisyllable), 145
perpend, 220
personage, 159
perspective, 217
pia mater, 158
pickle-herring, 158
picture of we three, 169
piece of Eve's flesh, 156
Pigrogromitus, 170
pilchards, 187
pipe (= voice), 154
pitch (in falconry), 142
pluck on, 222
point-devise, 186
points, 156
politician, 191
possess (= inform), 175
post (= messenger), 165
pound (plural), 215
practice (= trick), 221
praise (= appraise), 164
prank (verb), 179
pregnant (= ready), 168, 189
presupposed upon, 221
prevented, 189
private (= privacy), 197
profound (= sage), 160
proper (= comely), 190
proper (= own), 220
proper-false, 168
propertied, 206
provident, 146
pure (adverb), 212
Puritan, 174, 175
Pythagoras, 206

quick (= lively), 142
Quinapalus, 156
quirk, 199
quit (= release), 221

receiving, 190
recollected terms, 176
record (= remembrance), 218
recover (= gain), 175
reliques, 195
relish, 204
remember me, 219
remembrance (quadrisyllable), 144
renegado, 193
renown (verb), 195
retention, 212
reverberate, 164
round (= plain), 173
rubious, 154
rudesby, 203
rule (= conduct), 174

sack, 176
sad (= sober, grave), 195
said (= called), 204
Saint Anne, 174
Saint Bennet, 210
save (= except), 191
scab, 183
scathful, 211
school i' the church, 193
scout (verb), 198
season (metaphor), 144
self (adjective), 145
semblative, 155
she (= woman), 163
sheep-biter, 180
shent, 207
sheriff's post, 159
shrewdly, 221
shrewishly, 159
silly sooth, 177
sir (= lord), 196
Sir (priestly title), 200, 204
skilless, 194
skills (= matters), 220
skipping (= wild, mad), 161
'slid, 202
'slight, 181, 191
sneck up, 173
so (= so be it), 156
soft! 183, 185
sometime, 213
sonnet, 195
sooth (= truth), 177
Sophy, 186, 200
sound (= clear), 155
sound (or south ?), 139
sowter, 184
speaks madman, 158
spheres (dissyllable), 189
spinsters, 177
spirit (monosyllable), 142
spleen, 192
split, 145
spoke (= said), 154
squash, 159
staniel, 184
state (= authority), 182
state (= chair of state), 182
state (= estate), 165
stitches, 192
stock (= stocking), 153
stone-bow, 182
stoup, 169
stout (= proud), 186
Strachy, 181
strange (= distant), 186, 217
strangeness, 203
strangle thy propriety, 213
stuck (= thrust), 200
substractors, 149
suffers under probation, 185
suited (= dressed), 218
supportance, 201
swabber, 161
swarths, 175
sweet and twenty, 171
sweet-heart, 150
sweeting, 171
syllogism, 156

tabor, 187
taffeta, 178
tainting, 213
take air and taint, 197
take thy fortunes up, 213
take up (quarrel), 200
tall, 149, 204
tang, 185, 196
Tartar, 187
taste (= try), 189, 199
taxation, 162
tender (= cherish), 213
testril, 170
that (conjunctional affix), 148, 165, 191, 213, 222
that (= in that), 142
these set kind, 157
this great lubber, the world, 202
those poor number, 145
thou (verb), 192
thought (= love ?), 179
thought is free, 150
throw, 210
Tiger (name of ship), 211
tillyvally, 172
time-pleaser, 175
tinkers, 173
to (infinitive), 165
tongues (play upon), 151
trade, 189
tray-trip, 186
triplex, 210
trunks, 202
tuck (= rapier), 199

unauspicious, 212
unchary, 198
undertaker, 201
unfirm, 177
ungird thy strangeness, 203
unhatched, 199
unkind, 201
unmatchable, 160
unprizable, 211
unprofited, 154
upon, 221
upshot, 206
use (= usury), 188
use (verb), 177
usurp, 160

validity (= value), 142
venerable, 201
vent, 202
vice, 207
viol-de-gamboys, 149
vox, 220
vulgar proof, 190

wainropes, 192
was (= had been), 207
watch, 182, 214
water (in diagnosis), 197
waxen hearts, 168
weeds (= garments), 218
welkin, 171, 188
well-a-day that, 207
well-favoured, 159
were better, 168
westward-ho, 190
what (= what a), 184
what (= who), 147, 158
what's to do? 195
what time, 209
where, 218
whiles, 195, 209
whipstock, 170
whirligig, 222
windy side, 197
wit and safety, 217
witchcraft, 212
with (= by), 157
wive (verb), 224
woodcock, 183, 206
worn (= forgotten), 177
worth (= wealth), 194
wrack, 212
wrangle, 208

yare, 199
yellow stockings, 185, 195
yeoman of the wardrobe, 181
you (redundant), 164
you were best, 156, 195

zanies, 157

ROLFE'S ENGLISH CLASSICS

Designed for Use in High Schools and Other Secondary Schools

Edited by WILLIAM J. ROLFE, Litt. D.

Formerly Head Master, High School, Cambridge, Mass.

Uniform Flexible Cloth, 12mo. Illustrated. Each, 56 Cents

Browning's Select Poems

Twenty Poems (including "Pippa Passes"), with Introduction, Life of Browning, Chronological Table of His Works, List of Books useful in studying them, Critical Comments, and Notes.

Browning's Select Dramas

Containing "A Blot in the 'Scutcheon," "Colombe's Birthday," and "A Soul's Tragedy"—with Introduction, Critical Comments, and Notes.

Goldsmith's Select Poems

"The Traveller," "The Deserted Village," and "Retaliation," with Life of Goldsmith, Recollections and Criticisms by Thackeray, Coleman the Younger, Campbell, Forster, and Irving, and Notes.

Gray's Select Poems

The "Elegy," "The Bard," "The Progress of Poesy," and other Poems, with Life of Gray, William Howitt's Description of Stoke-Pogis, and historical, critical, and explanatory Notes.

Macaulay's Lays of Ancient Rome

With the Author's Preface and Introductions, Criticisms by John Stuart Mill, Henry Morley, "Christopher North," and others, historical and explanatory Notes, and copious Illustrations.

Milton's Minor Poems

Containing all of Milton's Minor Poems except the Translations, with biographical and critical Introductions, and historical and explanatory Notes.

Wordsworth's Select Poems

Seventy-one Poems, with Life, Criticisms from Matthew Arnold, R. H. Hutton, Principal Shairp, J. R. Lowell, and Papers of the Wordsworth Society, and very full Notes. Illustrated by Abbey, Parsons, and other eminent artists.

Copies will be sent, prepaid, on receipt of the price.

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

NEW YORK CINCINNATI CHICAGO

(s.96)

Webster's School Dictionaries

REVISED EDITIONS

WEBSTER'S SCHOOL DICTIONARIES in their revised form constitute a progressive series, carefully graded and especially adapted for Primary Schools, Common Schools, High Schools, Academies, and private students. These Dictionaries have all been thoroughly revised, entirely reset, and made to conform in all essential respects to Webster's International Dictionary.

WEBSTER'S PRIMARY SCHOOL DICTIONARY . . $0.48

Containing over 20,000 words and meanings, with over 400 illustrations.

WEBSTER'S COMMON SCHOOL DICTIONARY . $0.72

Containing over 25,000 words and meanings, with over 500 illustrations.

WEBSTER'S HIGH SCHOOL DICTIONARY . . $0.98

Containing about 37,000 words and definitions, with over 800 illustrations.

WEBSTER'S ACADEMIC DICTIONARY

Cloth, $1.50; Indexed . $1.80

The Same . . Half Calf, $2.75; Indexed, 3.00

Abridged directly from the International Dictionary, and giving the orthography, pronunciations, definitions, and synonyms of the large vocabulary of words in common use, with over 800 illustrations.

SPECIAL EDITIONS

Webster's Countinghouse Dictionary. Sheep, Indexed, $2.40

Webster's Condensed Dictionary

Cloth, $1.44; Indexed . 1.75

The Same . . Half Calf, $2.75; Indexed, 3.00

Webster's Handy Dictionary 15

Webster's Pocket Dictionary. Cloth 57

The Same. Roan Flexible 69

The Same. Roan Tucks 78

The Same. Morocco, Indexed 90

Webster's American People's Dictionary and Manual .48

Webster's Practical Dictionary 80

Copies sent, prepaid, on receipt of price.

American Book Company

NEW YORK • CINCINNATI • CHICAGO

(S. 104)

An Introduction to the

Study of American Literature

By BRANDER MATTHEWS
Professor of Literature in Columbia University

Cloth, 12mo, 256 pages . . . . Price $1.00

A text-book of literature on an original plan, and conforming with the best methods of teaching.

Admirably designed to guide, to supplement, and to stimulate the student's reading of American authors.

Illustrated with a fine collection of facsimile manuscripts, portraits of authors, and views of their homes and birthplaces.

Bright, clear, and fascinating, it is itself a literary work of high rank.

The book consists mostly of delightfully readable and yet comprehensive little biographies of the fifteen greatest and most representative American writers. Each of the sketches contains a critical estimate of the author and his works, which is the more valuable coming, as it does, from one who is himself a master. The work is rounded out by four general chapters which take up other prominent authors and discuss the history and conditions of our literature as a whole. The book also contains a complete chronology of the best American literature from the beginning down to the present period.

Each of the fifteen biographical sketches is illustrated by a fine portrait of its subject and views of his birthplace or residence and in some cases of both. They are also accompanied by each author's facsimile manuscript covering one or two pages. The book contains excellent portraits of many other authors famous in American literature.

Copies sent, prepaid, on receipt of the price.

American Book Company

NEW YORK • CINCINNATI • CHICAGO

(S. 91)

A History of English Literature

By REUBEN POST HALLECK, M.A. (Yale)

Cloth, 12mo, 499 pages. Illustrated . . Price $1.25

Halleck's History of English Literature is a concise and interesting text-book of the history and development of English literature from the earliest times to the present. While the work is sufficiently simple to be readily comprehended by high school students, the treatment is not only philosophic, but also stimulating and suggestive, and will naturally lead to original thinking.

The book is a history of literature and not a mere collection of biographical sketches. Only enough of the facts of an author's life are given to make students interested in him as a personality, and to show how his environment affected his work. The author's productions, their relation to the age, and the reasons why they hold a position in literature, receive treatment commensurate with their importance.

One of the most striking features of the work consists in the way in which literary movements are clearly outlined at the beginning of each of the chapters. Special attention is given to the essential qualities which differentiate one period from another, and to the animating spirit of each age.

At the end of each chapter a carefully prepared list of books is given to direct the student in studying the original works of the authors treated. He is told not only what to read, but also where to find it at the least cost.

Copies will be sent, prepaid, on receipt of the price.

American Book Company

NEW YORK • CINCINNATI • CHICAGO

(S. 00)

Important Text-Books in Rhetoric

BY ADAMS SHERMAN HILL

Boylston Professor of Rhetoric and Oratory in Harvard University

BEGINNINGS OF RHETORIC AND COMPOSITION $1.25

This book is designed primarily to meet the needs of pupils in secondary schools who are learning to express themselves with the pen; at the same time it contains so much information that is new in presentation and permanent in value that it is well adapted to more mature minds. It shows the young writer how to present what he has to say in the best English within his reach and in the form best adapted to his purpose. No supplement with exercises is required in connection with this work, as the book is complete in itself. Nearly two hundred exercises are introduced to aid the pupil in the most practical way.

FOUNDATIONS OF RHETORIC . . $1.00

The object of this book is to train boys and girls to say in written language, correctly, clearly, and effectively, what they have to say. It gives a minimum of space to technicalities and a maximum of space to essentials. In language singularly direct and simple it sets forth fundamental principles of correct speaking, and accompanies each rule with abundant illustrations and examples.

PRINCIPLES OF RHETORIC . . . $1.20

This popular work has been almost wholly rewritten, and is enlarged by much new material. The treatment is based on the principle that the function of rhetoric is not to provide the student of composition with materials for thought, nor yet to lead him to cultivate style for style's sake, but to stimulate and train his powers of expression—to enable him to say what he has to say in appropriate language.

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

(S. 87)

Text-Books in Grammar for Advanced Grades

BASKERVILL AND SEWELL'S ENGLISH GRAMMAR

90 cents

An advanced grammar for use in High School, Academy, and College classes. It combines in a remarkable degree a clear and concise statement of the facts of the language, based on its reputable use in literature, with rational methods of teaching and applying the same.

LYTE'S ADVANCED GRAMMAR AND COMPOSITION

75 cents

For use in High Schools, Normal Schools, and other Preparatory Schools. Based on the author's popular "Grammar and Composition" and embodying the improvements suggested by successful class room work.

MAXWELL'S ADVANCED LESSONS IN ENGLISH GRAMMAR . . . . . 60 cents

For use in Higher Grammar Grades and High Schools. It embraces all the theory and practice necessary during the last two years of a grammar school course or throughout a high school course. It is intended to serve first, as a *text-book*, and second, as a *book of reference*.

POWELL AND CONNOLLY'S RATIONAL GRAMMAR OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE . . 60 cents

This new grammar differs widely in treatment and terminology from other text-books in English. The subject is developed logically, and every point is made simple and clear. The practical side of the study—the correct use of language in speech and writing—is especially emphasized.

Copies sent, prepaid, on receipt of the price.

American Book Company

NEW YORK • CINCINNATI • CHICAGO

(S. 83)

ESSENTIALS IN ANCIENT HISTORY

Half Leather, 528 Pages. Price, $1.50

By ARTHUR MAYER WOLFSON, Ph.D.

Assistant in History, De Witt Clinton High School, New York City

In Consultation with

ALBERT BUSHNELL HART, LL.D.

Professor of History, Harvard University

THIS convenient manual presents the essentials in ancient history as a unit in a manner both comprehensible and interesting to first-year students in secondary schools. It is prepared on the plan recommended by the Committee of Seven, and at the same time meets every requirement of the Regents of the State of New York. It combines in one volume Greek and Roman history with that of the Eastern nations, and pays more attention to civilization than to mere constitutional development.

The paragraph headings are given in the margins, thus making the text continuous and easy to read. At the end of each chapter are lists of topics for further research, bibliographies of parallel reading, and references to both ancient and modern authorities. A special feature is the giving of a brief list of selected books, not exceeding $25 in cost, and suitable for a school library. The numerous maps show only the places mentioned in the text, thus avoiding confusion from too much detail. The illustrations, although attractive, have been chosen primarily with the purpose of accurately explaining the text.

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY, Publishers

A Modern Chemistry

ELEMENTARY CHEMISTRY

$1.10

LABORATORY MANUAL

50c.

By F. W. CLARKE
Chief Chemist of the United States Geological Survey

and L. M. DENNIS
Professor of Inorganic and Analytical Chemistry in Cornell University

THE study of chemistry, apart from its scientific and detailed applications, is a training in the interpretation of evidence, and herein lies one of its chief merits as an instrument of education. The authors of this Elementary Chemistry have had this idea constantly in mind: theory and practice, thought and application, are logically kept together, and each generalization follows the evidence upon which it rests. The application of the science to human affairs, and its utility in modern life, are given their proper treatment.

The Laboratory Manual contains directions for experiments illustrating all the points taken up, and prepared with reference to the recommendations of the Committee of Ten and the College Entrance Examination Board. Each alternate page is left blank for recording the details of the experiment, and for writing answers to suggestive questions which are introduced in connection with the work.

The books reflect the combined knowledge and experience of their distinguished authors, and are equally suited to the needs both of those students who intend to take a more advanced course in chemical training, and of those who have no thought of pursuing the study further.

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY
Publishers

NEW YORK CINCINNATI CHICAGO

(S. 162)

Text-Books in Natural History

By JAMES G. NEEDHAM, M.S.
Instructor in Zoölogy, Knox College, Galesburg, Ill.

NEEDHAM'S ELEMENTARY LESSONS IN ZOÖLOGY

90 cents

A guide in studying animal life in field and laboratory adapted for use in High Schools, Academies, Normal Schools, etc. It has been prepared to meet the widely recognized demand for a text-book in this department of Natural History which should be brief in compass, accurate in statement, and scientific in treatment.

Some of the leading features of the book are: the selection of types for study that are common and easily accessible; the clear and ample directions given for collecting material for study; the means suggested for studying animal life; the microscopic study of the simpler animal types; the adaptation of the book to the use of schools with little material equipment; the natural and easily comprehensible method of classification, and their morphology, physiology, and natural development.

NEEDHAM'S OUTDOOR STUDIES . . . 40 cents

This little book is intended to supply a series of lessons in Nature Study suitable for pupils in the Intermediate or Grammar Grades. Designed for pupils of some years of experience and some previous training in observation, these lessons are given as guides to close and continued observation, and for the educative value of the phenomena of nature which they describe.

Copies sent, prepaid, on receipt of the price.

American Book Company

NEW YORK • CINCINNATI • CHICAGO

(S. 166)

OUTLINES OF BOTANY

For the High School Laboratory and Classroom

By ROBERT GREENLEAF LEAVITT, A.M.

Of the Ames Botanical Laboratory

Prepared at the request of the Botanical Department of Harvard University.

LEAVITT'S OUTLINES OF BOTANY, Cloth, 8vo. 272 pages. $1.00
The same, with Gray's Field, Forest, and Garden Flora. 791 pages 1.80
The same, with Gray's Manual. 1,087 pages . . . 2.25

This book has been prepared to meet a specific demand. Many schools, having outgrown the method of teaching botany hitherto prevalent, find the more recent text-books too difficult and comprehensive for practical use in an elementary course. In order, therefore, to adapt this text-book to present requirements, the author has combined with great simplicity and definiteness in presentation, a careful selection and a judicious arrangement of matter. It offers

1. A series of laboratory exercises in the morphology and physiology of phanerogams.
2. Directions for a practical study of typical cryptogams, representing the chief groups from the lowest to the highest.
3. A substantial body of information regarding the forms, activities, and relationships of plants, and supplementing the laboratory studies.

The laboratory work is adapted to any equipment, and the instructions for it are placed in divisions by themselves, preceding the related chapters of descriptive text, which follows in the main the order of topics in Gray's Lessons in Botany. Special attention is paid to the ecological aspects of plant life, while at the same time morphology and physiology are fully treated.

There are 384 carefully drawn illustrations, many of them entirely new. The appendix contains full descriptions of the necessary laboratory materials, with directions for their use. It also gives helpful suggestions for the exercises, addressed primarily to the teacher, and indicating clearly the most effective pedagogical methods.

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY, Publishers

DATE DUE

APR 2 1991		
MAR 5 1981		
FEB 2 3	JUN 1 9	
	JUN 1 6	
OCT 3 0		
NOV 4 RET'D	APR 1 1 1998	
MAR 1 1982	0 4	
MAR 0 1		
APR 1 3 1982		
	DEC 0 1 2001	
OCT 2 6 1984	DEC 0 1 2001	
	4/30/03 APR 2 5 2006	
AUG 6 1985		
JUL 3 0	MAY 0 5 2003	
FEB 8 1988	APR 2 8 2006	
FEB 8	SEP 2 1 2009	
UG 2 0 1988	SEP 2 1 2009	
MAR 2 5 1991		

DEMCO 38-297

3 1197 00111 8923